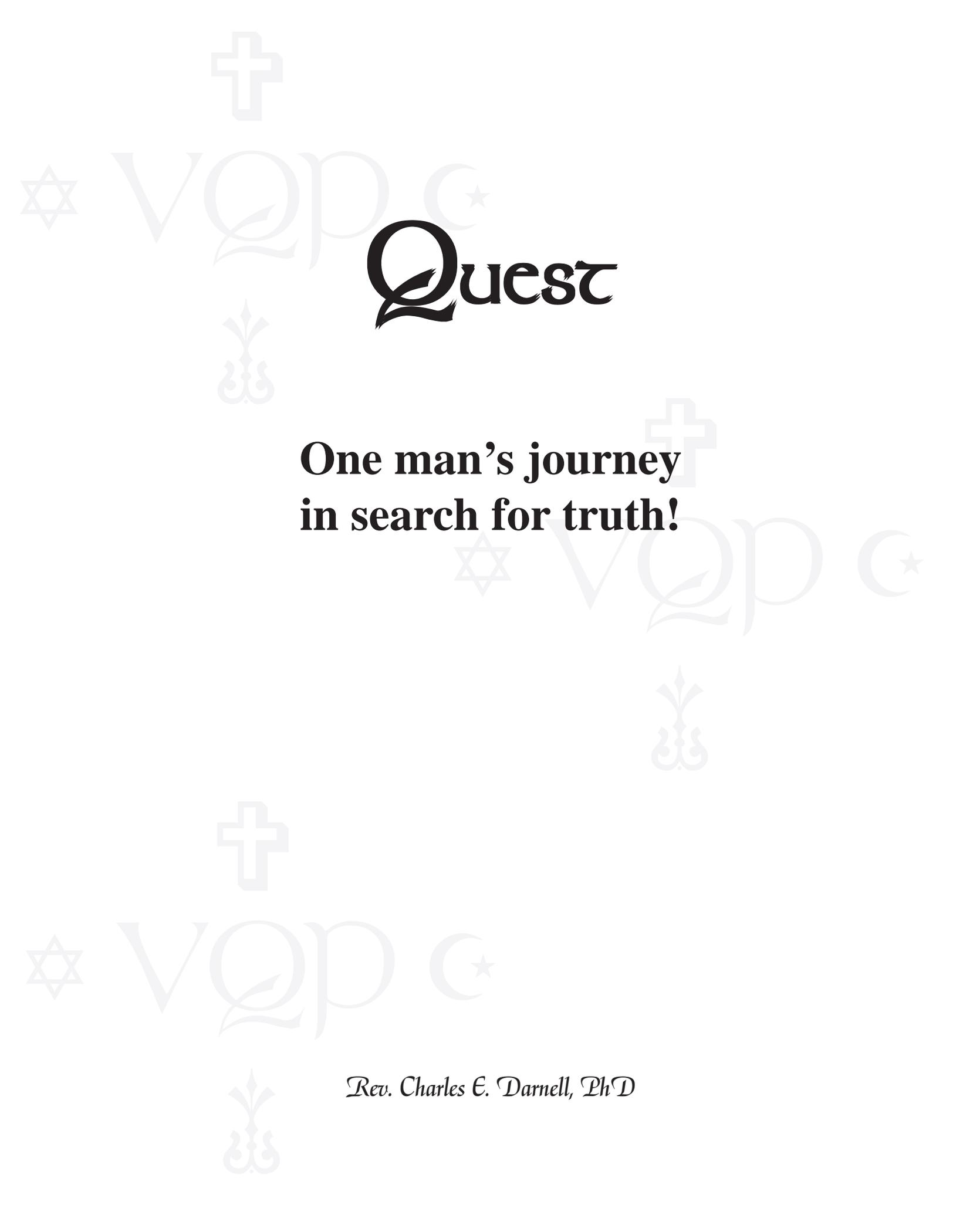


Quest

One Man's Search for Truth!



Rev. Charles E. Darnell, PhD



Quest

**One man's journey
in search for truth!**

Rev. Charles E. Darnell, PhD

Scripture quotations that are unmarked in some sections may be from the Authorized or King James Bible (KJV); or in some cases the scripture quotations are from the New International Version (NIV); and, in some cases the scripture quotations may be from the New King James Version (NKJV). This is not intentional; This work is a collective of previous work with previously granted permissions, along with new work that completes the Abundant Life Series. For the most part the verses used are identified to the respective version they derive from. For the NKJV and NIV the following is stated:

Scripture quotations marked (NKJV) are taken from the New King James Version. Copyright© 1979, 1980, 1982 by Thomas Nelson Publishers. Used by permission. All rights reserved.

Scripture quotations marked (NIV) are taken from the New International Version. Copyright© 1973, 1978, 1984 by International Bible Society. Used by permission of Zondervan Publishing House. All rights reserved.

Original Copyright© 2003

Edited with the assistance of Teresa Spurling (my wife), PhD, NBCT and fully revised in 2015.

Copyright © 2015 by Charles E. Darnell, all rights reserved.

Published by
VisionQuest Publishing, Inc.
Campbellsville, Kentucky 42718-7416



No portion of this book may be reproduced in any form or by any means in whole or in part without written permission of the publisher. Reproduction for use in electronic media format is also prohibited. Due to copyright infringement and piracy of intellectual property all pages of digitally formatted work from VisionQuest Publishing will be electronically watermarked. Any page not having this watermark is not an original and should not be accepted as a valid copy of the original copyrighted material.

Throughout my works I have attempted to incorporate supporting scripture for the convenience of the reader. In doing such I may, or may not, follow the appropriate manuscript style as stated in the Fifth Edition of the Publication Manual of the American Psychological Association (APA) or any other accepted manuscript guide. While acknowledging the authority of the APA there is a clause used in the stated manual which needs to be inserted herein:

The Publication Manual presents explicit style requirements but acknowledges that alternatives are sometimes necessary; authors should balance the rules of the Publication Manual with good judgment. Preface: p. xx.

Preface

Mankind has been on a measured journey since creation. That path has taken mankind through wars, periods of peace, over the ramparts of laws, under the veil of secrets and always with a grain of deception thrown in for extra problems. Mankind has sought control, influence, and power. He has learned to manipulate situations to suit his fancy. At the same time mankind creates religions to mask their activities so they can sprinkle a few nice words over the plans of men and call it the work of God. If God had desired to have a religion of this type, He would have set it up on any one of numerous opportunities, but that was not His will. Therefore He did not establish the so-called religions that exist today. To carry that one step further, neither did His Son. Jesus did not come into the world to establish a religion, He came into the world to redeem mankind to the correct position man held with God in the Garden of Eden.

Now, it seems, that mankind is headed toward the final battle that men will fight prior to the Second Coming of Christ. The written works from men produced in the last ten to fifteen years on the Second Coming could fill a good library. Now comes this book! Why should you desire to read another book on this subject. Well, it may surprise you what this one says! To bring this down to one concise question, **Have we all been lied to?**

A simple question that completely contradicts most of the other works on this subject. The answer to this one question should only lead you to begin thinking about other questions. If we have been lied to, how did the misinformation (the lie) get started? Where can you find the truth?

I'm on a quest toward the goal of understanding truth. Join me as we journey through over thirty-five years of searching in an attempt to discover the truth of God's Word.

An Abundant Life?

Here is a summary of what is taught in several of my works :

Key to Yourself — Teaches how to get started toward understanding the relationship between mankind and God and explains the two pathways of secular (psychology) and spiritual (by faith) thought leading toward an abundant life.

Change - In the Hands of the Potter — Teaches exactly that! Change and how to get it started by seeing and using a Biblical example. Concludes with the cardinal tenants of God's realm.

From Disobedience to Self Oppression — Rev. Delvert Williams, 1940-2011, so graciously gave me his book and asked that I use it so the Black community could understand a more Abundant Life. Rev. Williams' book so clearly illustrates what I've been saying. Life is obedience and disobedience does cause self oppression. Race is not the issue!

The Spirit World — Teaches that we are life forms created by God's mighty hand. Even so, we seemingly do not understand even ourselves, much less the other created beings living in God's spirit realm. The understanding of ourselves and much of what happens in the spirit realm is revealed in this book.

Rest Assured — From the pinnacle of understanding, by and through God's blessed grace, comes the assurance that all the promises from God are real.

Threshold — Originally written for teens but just as useful to adults. Teaches the truth pertaining to the birth and death of Christ, gives an account of mankind's deceptive practices and concludes with a teaching of the Gospel of John.

Quest — This summary extracts information from these listed individual books and combines ideas and concepts together into one work for simplicity's sake. Continues with information concerning the Tribulation and Millennial Age.

Just what is Abundant Life anyway?

Many have the idea that abundant life is wealth, yet the Bible shows us time and again that wealth, by itself, will not produce an abundant life. In fact, spiritually, the person possessing wealth may actually be poor in regard to abundant life.

Notice that the book titles in this list do not refer to religious rituals. Religion is one of the greatest deceptions created by Satan, and placed in the hearts of mankind. This even goes to the extreme thought that if it involves God, in any manner, it must be religious. That's not abundant life,; that is servitude to particular thoughts of men for the sake of power, influence and monetary gain.

It seems to this author that mankind continues to seek truth in their relationship to God. They have the answer; but don't seem to understand how to recognize it, or how to use it. I say this as a matter of fact: Mankind had three denominations of Christian religion in 1617 and now there are approximately 38,000 Christian denominations in the world. This statistic takes into consideration cultural distinctions of denominations in different countries. Reference: World Christian Encyclopedia (2001). Surely we have not found truth and are not satisfied with what is there.

Let's ask the question again. What is Abundant Life? In *Key to Yourself* it was attitude, and not religion that was necessary to get mankind to understand how to have abundant life. Genesis should clearly show us this attitude and I think it does. Read Genesis 2:18-19, *And the LORD God said, "It is not good that man should be alone; I will make him a helper comparable to him." Out of the ground the LORD God formed every beast of the field and every bird of the air, and brought them to Adam to see what he would call them. And whatever Adam called each living creature, that was its name.* Notice in verse 19 that God brought each created creature to Adam. I take this to mean that God was physically there, along with Adam as the names were given.

To further prove that God had a physical, personal relationship with Adam look at the following verses: Genesis 3:8-23, *And they heard the sound of the LORD God walking in the garden in the cool of the day, and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the LORD God among the trees of the garden. Then the LORD God called to Adam and said to him, "Where are you?"*

So he said, "I heard Your voice in the garden, and I was afraid because I was naked; and I hid myself."

And He said, "Who told you that you were naked? Have you eaten from the tree of which I commanded you that you should not eat?"

Then the man said, "The woman whom You gave to be with me, she gave me of the tree, and I ate."

And the LORD God said to the woman, "What is this you have done?"

The woman said, "The serpent deceived me, and I ate."

So the LORD God said to the serpent: "Because you have done this, you are cursed more than all cattle, and more than every beast of the field; on your belly you shall go, and you shall eat dust all the days of your life. And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your seed and her Seed; He shall bruise your head, and you shall bruise His heel."

To the woman He said: "I will greatly multiply your sorrow and your conception; in pain you shall bring forth children; your desire shall be for your husband, and he shall rule over you."

Then to Adam He said, "Because you have heeded the voice of your wife, and have eaten from the tree of which I commanded you, saying, 'You shall not eat of it': Cursed is the ground for your sake; in toil you shall eat of it all the days of your life. Both thorns and thistles it shall bring forth for you, and you shall eat the herb of the field. In the sweat of your face you shall eat bread till you return to the ground, for out of it you were taken; for dust you are, and to dust you shall return."

And Adam called his wife's name Eve, because she was the mother of all living. Also for Adam and his wife the LORD God made tunics of skin, and clothed them. Then the LORD God said, "Behold, the man has become like one of Us, to know good and evil. And now, lest he put out his hand and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live forever;" therefore the LORD God sent him out of the garden of Eden to till the ground from which he was taken.

In verse 8 we see that God was walking in the Garden and was heard by Adam and his wife. Notice that Adam's wife wasn't named Eve until verse 20. In verses 9-19 we have a running conversation between the four individuals who were in the Garden: God, Satan, Adam and his wife.

In verse 21 we see that God, himself, made tunics of skin to clothe Adam and Eve.

I conclude that Abundant Life is a personal relationship with God. Worship is being obedient. It is not religion. Jesus came to reestablish the lost communion between mankind and God the Father. For this to be accomplished we must believe that Jesus is the Son of God and place our faith in Him.

WEALTH — in regard to an Abundant Life

The Bible tells us that we are lenders and not borrowers. Deuteronomy 15:6, *For the Lord your God will bless you just as He promised you; you shall lend to many nations, but you shall not borrow; you shall reign over many nations, but they shall not reign over you.* How do we become lenders? Surely it can't be by running up every credit card that we can obtain to the maximum limit of credit. Bank CEOs want you to do this, they know that you can never pay off all that credit debt by making the minimum required payments. Being a lender requires discipline! To discipline yourself to the point that you know that you don't have to keep up with the Joneses, nor use all those credit cards to impress everyone with the material things you have. Actually, this is an illustration of the breaking of one of God's Commandments. It is the tenth Commandment. Exodus 20:17, *"You shall not covet your neighbor's house; you shall not covet your neighbor's wife, nor his male servant, nor his female servant, nor his ox, nor his donkey, nor anything that is your neighbor's."* Americans have been so deceived with materialism that we've lost sight of how to manage our finances.

Consider the requirements to obtain a Conventional Mortgage Loan. Ratios become the driving force for such a loan, but have you considered why such seemingly conservative ratios are used as the basis for a loan? Why is there an established rule that your monthly housing expense, as a portion of your total monthly income, can be no higher than 28%? Why the rule that your total monthly debt payment, including your housing expense as a portion of your total monthly income can be up to 38%? The simple reason is that mortgage companies do not want you to get into financial trouble and know these ratios will keep you in safe territory. We have now seen the results of more and more people obtaining sub-prime mortgage loans, the greed of banks to cash in on the sub-prime market, the collapse of the housing market and the resultant bankruptcies and bailouts.

In understanding these mortgage ratios, and using your own income, you can establish a viable working budget that will make you a lender and not a borrower. Consider the following:

- 28% Housing Expense (mortgage, rent, taxes, utilities, maintenance, etc.)
- 10% All Other Debt Payments (including car payment)
- 10% Tithe to God (not necessarily church)
- 10% Savings (also stocks, bonds, IRA and 401K)
- 5% Car Expenses (maintenance items and gasoline)
- 25% Food (both eat at home and eating out)
- 12% Clothes/Entertainment

By living within one's means you are not in such outlandish debt that you have to consider filing for bankruptcy just to break even and start over. Statistically, over 50% of those filing for bankruptcy will have to file for bankruptcy again because of personal mismanagement of finances.

HEALTH — in regard to an Abundant Life

Within the pages of the books in my Abundant Life Series there are no less than four Biblical verses indicating that Jesus took our afflictions upon the Cross along with our sins. Also, there are no less than twelve verses in the Bible to initiate healing. So why are we sick and dependent upon so many drugs? Once again it's caused by deception and misunderstanding. The pharmaceutical companies want you to use their products. Why else would we have all the ads for who knows what type drug? Listen very carefully to the list of side affects that are associated with some of these drugs. I think I'd rather take my chances without the drug. I wonder, would the pharmaceutical companies be screaming, **UNFAIR** if there were television ads teaching mankind the truth that is in the Bible?

LIFE

Through God's grace I have come to understand God's love for mankind and the power that He has given to each one of us. We do possess the power to live life more abundantly. We must understand that life is so much more than wealth. It is love and giving! It is health, strength and wisdom! It is study, learning and teaching! It is obedience to God's Will and discipline of one's own life! It is the mastery of these things, and once mastered there is nothing impossible that cannot be obtained or done!

Abundant life is the power within yourself!

Learn how to apply abundant life principles to your own circumstances!



The Achievement of an Abundant Life

You began reading this book for a reason. You were looking for truth, or answers within yourself. Please allow me to make a summation of the journey through the Abundant Life Series. In the first book, *Key to Yourself*, it was necessary to establish a common link between mankind's thoughts and ideas and the true operation of God's limitless laws. We used both the principals of psychology and those of the Bible to learn how to get to this first level of understanding.

Also in *Key to Yourself* we learned about the four verses that tell us healing within our body has already occurred, and the pain and suffering of an ailment or surgery has already been taken by Jesus unto the cross of Calvary. These verses are:

- Psalm 103:3, *Who forgives all your iniquities, who heals all your diseases.*
- Isaiah 53:4-5, *Surely He has borne our griefs and carried our sorrows; yet we esteemed Him stricken, smitten by God, and afflicted. But He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities; the chastisement for our peace was upon Him, and by His stripes we are healed.*
- Matthew 8:17, *That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah the prophet, saying: "He Himself took our infirmities and bore our sicknesses."*
- 1 Peter 2:24, *Who Himself bore our sins in His own body on the tree, that we, having died to sins, might live for righteousness—by whose stripes you were healed.*

We also learned that there were no less than 12 means to promote healing? These are:

1) Obedience, Exodus 15:26, *He said, "If you listen carefully to the voice of the LORD your God and do what is right in his eyes, if you pay attention to his commands and keep all his decrees, I will not bring on you any of the diseases I brought on the Egyptians, for I am the LORD, who heals.*

2) Forgiveness, Psalm 103:3, *Who forgives all your sins and heals all your diseases.*

3) Speaking with a wise tongue, Proverbs 12:18, *Reckless words pierce like a sword, but the tongue of the wise brings healing.*

4) The name of Jesus, Luke 9:6, *So they set out and went from village to village, preaching the gospel and healing people everywhere. Acts 3:16, By faith in the name of Jesus, this man whom you see and know was made strong. It is Jesus' name and the faith that comes through Him that has given this complete healing to him, as you can all see.*

5) The gift of the Spirit, 1 Corinthians 12:9, *To another faith by the same Spirit, to another gifts of healing by the same Spirit.*

6) Faith, Matthew 8:13, *Then Jesus said to the centurion, "Go! It will be done just as you believed it would." And his servant was healed at that very hour. Matthew 9:22 Jesus turned and saw her. "Take heart, daughter," He said, "your faith has healed you." And the woman was healed from that moment. Luke 8:48 Then He said to her, "Daughter, your faith has healed you. Go in peace."*

7) **The word**, Psalm 107:20, *He sent forth his word and healed them; He rescued them from the grave. Matthew 8:16, When evening came, many who were demon-possessed were brought to Him, and He drove out the spirits with a word and healed all the sick. Luke 7:7 That is why I did not even consider myself worthy to come to you. But say the word, and my servant will be healed.*

8) **Anointing with oil**, Mark 6:13, *They drove out many demons and anointed many sick people with oil and healed them.*

9) **Laying of hands**, Luke 4:40, *When the sun was setting, the people brought to Jesus all who had various kinds of sickness, and laying His hands on each one, He healed them.*

10) **Rebuking evil spirits**, Luke 9:42, *Even while the boy was coming, the demon threw him to the ground in a convulsion. But Jesus rebuked the evil spirit, healed the boy and gave him back to his father.*

11) **Prayer**, Acts 28:8, *His father was sick in bed, suffering from fever and dysentery. Paul went in to see him and, after prayer, placed his hands on him and healed him. James 5:14-15, Is any one of you sick? He should call the elders of the church to pray over him and anoint him with oil in the name of the Lord. And the prayer offered in faith will make the sick person well; the Lord will raise him up. If he has sinned, he will be forgiven.*

12) **Confession**, James 5:16, *Therefore confess your sins to each other and pray for each other so that you may be healed. The prayer of a righteous man is powerful and effective.*

Ups and Downs

It seems to me mankind goes through a series of ups and downs as we make the journey on the thread of life. We don't always seem to understand how to change things toward our favor utilizing the principles of God, or even what the principles of God's Kingdom really are. The second book in the Abundant Life Series, *Change* should have been rewarding for finding those answers. The entire combination lock sequence for the Kingdom of God was revealed to you and the lock will open if you would follow the truth that you were given. It took me the better part of the last thirty-five years to come to understand those truths and how they must be totally used for the inherited blessing of God to be fully manifested in one's life. You can use one or two of those principles and find a return on your investment of time: However, if you want the full measure of God's holy blessing contained within the deepest vault of the Kingdom, you must use the right combination otherwise the locking device will not function and you will still not receive the full reward.

Three terms were defined and studied in *Change*. The first was **spirit**: within this term we found usage in three different ways. I am a spirit (first), I have a soul and I live in a body? Genesis 1:26 identifies this spirit of one's self where it records, Then God said, "Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over the cattle, over all the earth and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth." Verse 27 will identify that this image was both male and female. But, what is this image in which we have been created? Is there any verse in the Bible, or the Quran, that truly states that

God is a spirit? Yes! There is, and it is spoken by Jesus in John 4:24, *“God is Spirit, and those who worship Him must worship in spirit and truth.”* Is that all there is to define mankind to be a spirit? No! Ecclesiastes 12:7 says, . . . *and the spirit returns to God who gave it.* John 3:6 gives us more understanding about our spirit. *Flesh gives birth to flesh, but the Spirit gives birth to spirit.* Look very closely at this verse and you will see two spirits identified. We see the spirit of God (meaning the first spirit and indicated with a capital letter) giving birth to our own spirit.

In addition to the Spirit of God, secondly we encounter the **Holy Spirit**. Are the Holy Spirit and the Spirit of God one and the same? No! They are not. I am not a theologian who is here to debate these two terms, however practical reading of God’s Word shows they are different. When the term Spirit of God is used, it is God’s inner feeling and not the third part of the Trinity. Look at Genesis 1:2, . . . *and the Spirit of God was hovering.* . . . Isn’t that a feeling, a thought or an emotion? That is not a functional entity that the Holy Spirit represents. There are three places in the Old Testament where the term Holy Spirit is used: Psalms 51:11, Isaiah 63:10 and 11. In all three cases it appears this is God’s feeling, His being, or His emotion. To me the full clarification is given in 1 Corinthians 2:11, *For what man knows the things of a man except the spirit of the man which is in him? Even so no one knows the things of God except the Spirit of God.* If this is the third part of the Holy Trinity, Jesus would have no reason to say what is recorded in Acts 1:4-5, *And being assembled together with them, He commanded them not to depart from Jerusalem, but to wait for the Promise of the Father, “Which,” He said, “you have heard from Me; for John truly baptized with water, but you shall be baptized with the Holy Spirit not many days from now.”*

Do you see the difference? If the Holy Spirit was already given to the world, there would be no reason for Jesus to say that it was a promised gift that would come in a few days, as occurred in Acts 2:4, *And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit and began to speak with other tongues (languages), as the Spirit gave them utterance.* Ask yourselves another question about Jesus’ statement. What is the record referred to when Jesus said to them: . . . *“Which you have heard from Me.”* In what verses did Jesus speak about the Holy Spirit? For the sake of understanding we have to look for the Comforter in the KJV, Helper in the NKJV and Counselor in the NIV to find this because that is the term that Jesus called the Holy Spirit, or Holy Ghost. There are four occasions where Jesus speaks about the Comforter:

John 14:16 . . . *give you another Helper.*

John 14:26 . . . *whom the Father will send in my name.*

John 15:26 . . . *the Helper comes, whom I shall send to you from the Father.*

John 16:7 . . . *for if I do not go away, the Helper will not come to you.*

Notice the following in the above verses:

John 14:16 usage of give and not gave, meaning this is in the future and not in the past.

John 14:26 usage of will send and not has sent.

John 15:26 usage of shall send and not has sent.

John 16:7 usage of will not come and not has come unto you.

There has to be a difference between the Spirit of God and the Holy Spirit; otherwise Jesus is a liar and the Word does not bear the truth. Here is my defined difference: The Spirit of God represents God’s essence of being. The Holy Spirit is the residual presence of Christ, possessing His authority and acting as Counselor and Comforter when we call upon the name of Jesus. Jesus, the Son of God, who was among us and represented the physical. Now, once the physical was

understood, defeated death, arose and returned to God the Father, then the Holy Spirit took up the banner to act, in Spirit, on Jesus' behalf.

The third usage is the word **spirits**. Normally, Biblical language implies these beings are evil. We could make a list of verses where we are shown the manner of these beings.

Jesus called these spirits out in the following:

Mark 1:26, 5:8, 7:25, 9:17:

1:26 NIV, *The evil spirit shook the man violently and came out of him with a shriek.*

5:8 NIV, *For Jesus had said to him, "come out of this man, you evil spirit!"*

7:25 NIV, *In fact, as soon as she heard about him, a woman whose little daughter was possessed by an evil spirit came and fell at his feet.*

9:17 NIV, *A man in the crowd answered, "Teacher, I brought you my son, who is possessed by a spirit that has robbed him of speech."*

And in the book of Luke 4:33, 8:29, 9:39, and 13:11:

4:33 NIV, *In the synagogue there was a man possessed by a demon, an evil spirit. He cried out at the top of his voice,*

8:29 NIV, *For Jesus had commanded the evil spirit to come out of the man. Many times it had seized him, and though he was chained hand and foot and kept under guard, he had broken his chains and had been driven by the demon into solitary places.*

9:39 NIV, *A spirit seizes him and he suddenly screams; it throws him into convulsions so that he foams at the mouth. It scarcely ever leaves him and is destroying him.*

13:11 NIV, *and a woman was there who had been crippled by a spirit for eighteen years. She was bent over and could not straighten up at all.*

Look at Luke 9:1 NIV, *When Jesus had called the Twelve together, he gave them power and authority to drive out all demons and to cure diseases.* Notice that the authority to do the same was given to the Apostles. Peter used this authority in Acts 5:12, 15-16 NIV, *The apostles performed many miraculous signs and wonders among the people. And all the believers used to meet together in Solomon's Colonnade. . . . As a result, people brought the sick into the streets and laid them on beds and mats so that at least Peter's shadow might fall on some of them as he passed by. Crowds gathered also from the towns around Jerusalem, bringing their sick and those tormented by evil spirits, and all of them were healed.* Philip did likewise in Acts 8:7 NIV, *With shrieks, evil spirits came out of many, and many paralytics and cripples were healed.*

The thing that I want you to see concerns Paul. Turn to Acts 16:18 NIV, *She kept this up for many days. Finally Paul became so troubled that he turned around and said to the spirit, "In the name of Jesus Christ I command you to come out of her!" At that moment the spirit left her!* Paul called out the evil spirit, and yet, he was not one of the original twelve Apostles of Jesus.

Do you understand what this means to you? **You have the authority to do likewise!** However, be careful, just because I have told you that you can do this, there are certain others steps that you must follow to fully use this authority. Look at Acts 19:15-16 NIV, *One day the evil spirit answered them, "Jesus I know, and I know about Paul, but who are you?" Then the man who had the evil spirit jumped on them and overpowered them all. He gave them such a beating that they ran out of the house naked and bleeding.* You will see that when others tried to call out these spirits they found that there was more to it than just calling upon the name of Jesus.

The second term that we must define is **faith**. I know it may be unnecessary to define faith because it is discussed in several places throughout the Abundant Life Series. There are two uses of the term faith. Many want to define faith as their religion. They say, "I have the faith." They

may know the rituals and the ceremonies and the correct reply to the written prayers, but do they have faith? Yes! In its simplest definition, faith is what you believe. Now, that would meet the usage just stated, but would it meet a definition pertaining to things unseen? For better understanding I must give you our last term for you to fully understand the second meaning of faith.

Our last term is **dominion**. Dominion: the physical world which you see and where your five senses are employed; and a dominion that you do not see or God's dominion. The dominion of the unseen has control and influence over the seen. This goes against everything your body tells you doesn't it? Yet, we reviewed the term spirit and saw in John 3:6 NIV, *Flesh gives birth to flesh, but the Spirit gives birth to spirit.*

Let's go further to define the difference between flesh and spirit. Turn to Romans 14:17, *For the kingdom of God is not eating and drinking, but righteousness and peace and joy in the Holy Spirit.* The next scripture provides the reason so many do not understand. 1 Corinthians 2:14 NIV, *The man without the Spirit does not accept the things that come from the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness to him, and he cannot understand them, because they are spiritually discerned.*

Stop and think! All things in this dominion where we live came from the unseen dominion. You say no! Man thought of this and created that. Really now! Where do you think those thoughts came from in the first place and what connects you to God? Sure the thought came from within yourself, but it is only the manifestation of the gifts from the unseen dominion. The point of connection between a person and God, the Infinite Power of the Universe, is man's spirit, or to be more specific his subconscious mind. Easily shown! Return once more to Genesis and read verse 1:1. What does it say? I don't care how hard you try, it does not say man created the heavens and the earth. Now, if God willed the physical to be formed where is it you think the power of creation comes from? If you still believe that it comes from the physical dominion of the senses, I ask for you to do only one thing: reach out your arm, swing it through the air, and close your fist down upon that air. Now with one thought create me a single blade of grass. When you have mastered that and create that single blade of grass, I'll start to question what you are telling me. But until that time I'll believe the recorded reality of the written word of God.

Again think! When you have a need and pray for that need asking God to fill it, doesn't the actual filling take place in God's dominion with the manifestation of the results here in this physical dominion? Wasn't the thought first in your prayer from your subconscious, and the thought was then sent by that prayer to God? Wasn't it your faith, or your belief, that God would answer the prayer that activated the unseen power of God to cause the need to be manifested in the here and now? Do you begin to understand how the power of the unseen dominion causes a resultant effect within the seen dominion, and yet, the actual force causing the result rests in the dominion of the unseen? So now, let's answer the last fact about faith. 2 Corinthians 5:7 NIV, tells us the truth about our faith, *We live by faith, not by sight.*

To fully understand, and employ, the principles of God's Kingdom we have to use our faith to activate the unseen to become real in the seen. This sounds completely contrary to everything the five senses tell us. It appears to me this is a stumbling block to many people. They will sit and say, "Let me see it and I'll believe it;" or rephrased, "I'll believe it when I see it." However, without a real belief in truth, a life-style to match, knowledge of the Word, and the belief in the Holy Spirit, we miss the boat and permit the evil one to continue to beat us down. We are the ones who cause prayer not to be answered, or sickness to be present, or poverty to be all around us. Okay you ask! What are these principles?

I have formulated these principles after many years of studying God's Holy Word. These principles are not called laws; laws represent the Jewish or Mosaic code, as distinct from the

Gospel. Jesus removed the curse of the law from us, but not the law. However, I did not say there are no commandments contained under the New Covenant. There are, and for the most part they follow the Ten Commandments. There is an exception, the fourth commandment is not defined in the New Covenant as being on any specific day, yet you are to obey the Lord your God and to worship Him. Jesus added a commandment in John 13:34, *“A new commandment I give to you, that you love one another; as I have loved you, that you also love one another.”* If we’d only follow this one command all the others would fall into their natural order. This one command from Jesus is the commandment I have repeatedly called the one rule to follow in the New Testament.

If you search you can find others who have defined principles, or theorems, or maxims as they see them and as given to them by the Holy Spirit. If you look carefully at all the others, and these here as well, you will see them overlap and blend together to cover the same information. The Holy Spirit gives the thought to different people and they in turn write their own words from those thoughts. The same Spirit is leading each of these people, the difference is in the manner that each person expresses the same thought from God. What you should understand is that truth will come through and can be tested to show the thought came from God. Here’s my short list of principles in God’s Kingdom. We went through each one in *Change* to show where it came from and how it works:

- 1) Your Salvation in Jesus Christ
- 2) Be Obedient to God
- 3) The Principle of Faith
- 4) The Principle of Sowing and Reaping
- 5) The Principle of Unity
- 6) The Principle of Use
- 7) The Principle of Patience
- 8) The Principle of Responsibility
- 9) The Principle of Greatness
- 10) The Power of Prayer

From Disobedience to Self Oppression

Rev. Delvert Williams was my friend and mentor for well over fifteen years before his passing. Before his death he gave me one of his books and asked that I use it so the races in America could better understand that race is not the issue, for we are all of one blood: human blood. Rev. Williams makes a statement at the beginning of his book that the work is from personal experience and learning. He writes the following: *“This book is based upon personal experiences, so while reading it or after reading it, do not say that you are too far gone and cannot return. I did not think I could come back however, I never gave up hope. Life without Christ is not life at all, it is merely an existence. That was not good enough. I knew there was a better life only because at one time I had it, lost it and I wanted it back.”*

Here is one of the scriptures he used and his helpful guides at the end of his book. Enjoy!

Titus 3:3-8, 10-11 NIV, *For we ourselves were also once foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving various lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful and hating one another. But when the kindness and the love of God our Savior toward man appeared, not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to His mercy He saved us, through the washing of regeneration and renewing of the Holy*

Spirit, whom He poured out on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Savior; that having been justified by His grace we should become heirs according to the hope of eternal life. This is a faithful saying, and these things I want you to affirm constantly, that those who have believed in God should be careful to maintain good works. These things are good and profitable to men. . . . Reject a divisive man after the first and second admonition, knowing that such a person is warped and sinning, being self-condemned.

At some point in the Christian walk we all become disobedient, foolish, and deceived by people and pleasures of this world. The Apostle Paul advises us of our past and informs us that because of the love, grace and mercy of God, He has made us heirs of His kingdom. However, disobedience still is a large part of the Christian life. The Apostle further advises us on how to warn others from the sin of disobedience. God has the foreknowledge of the fact that if there is continuous contact with sinners, and upon contact, sooner or later, . . .there will be contamination. It is my hope and prayer, as well as the will of God, this book will serve as a warning and a source of encouragement for you to continue your service and obedience to God.

Guides to assist you:

FINDING HELP IN SPECIAL CIRCUMSTANCES

Being a friend

Proverbs 17:17; Luke 10:25-37
John 15:11-17; Romans 16:1,2

Caring for the aged & widowed

Genesis 47:1-12; Ruth 1;
Proverbs 23:22; 1 Timothy 5:3-8

Celebrating a graduation

Psalm 119:105,106; Proverbs 9:
10-12; Galatians 5:16-26;
Philippians 4:4-9

Celebrate wedding anniversary

Psalm 100:1; 1 Corinthians 13

Controlling your tongue

Psalm 12; 19:14; Proverbs 11:13
Proverbs 26:20; James 3:1-12

Being a leader

Isaiah 11:1-9; 32:1-8;
1 Timothy 3:1-7; Titus 1:5-9
2 Timothy 2:14-26

Celebrating child birth/adoption

Psalm 100; Proverbs 22:6;
Luke 18:15-17; John 16:16-22

Celebrating a marriage

Genesis 2:18-24; Song of Songs 8:6-7
Ephesians 5:21-33; Colossians 2:6,7

Controlling your temper

Proverbs 14:17,29; 15:18; 19:11; 29:22
Ecclesiastes 7:9; Galatians 5:16-26

Discovering God's will

Psalm 15; Micah 6:6-8; Matthew 5:14-16
Luke 9:21-27; Romans 13:8-14;
2 Peter 1:3-9; 1 John 4:7-21

Encountering a cult

Matthew 7:15-20; 2 Peter 2;
1 John 4:1-6; Jude

Entering college

Proverbs 2:1-8; 3:1-18; 4:1-27;
23:12; Romans 8:1-17;

Experience death of love one

Job 19:25-27; John 11:25-27;
14:1-7; Romans 8:31-39; 14:7-9
1 Thessalonians 4:13-18

Suffering and persecution

Psalm 109; 119:153-160;
Matthew 5:3-12; John 15:18; 16:4;
Romans 8:18-30; 2 Corinthians
4:1-15; Hebrews 12:1-11;
1 Peter 4:12-19

Facing a divorce

Psalm 25; Matthew 19:1-9;
Philippians 3:1-11

Facing imprisonment

Lamentations 3:34-36;
Matthew 25:31-46; Luke 4:16-21

Facing a natural disaster

Genesis 8:1-9,17; Job 36:22-37;
Job 13; Psalms 29, 124;
Psalm 36:5-9; Jeremiah 31:35-37;
Romans 8:31-39; 1 Peter 1:3-12

Losing your job

Jeremiah 29:10-14; Luke 16:1-13;
Philippians 4:10-13

Encountering peer pressure

Proverbs 1:7-19; Romans 12:1-2;
Galatians 6:1-5; Ephesians 5:1-20

Entering military service

2 Samuel 22:2-51; Psalm 91;
Ephesians 6:10-20; 2 Timothy 2:1-13

Experiencing illness

Psalm 23; Mark 1:29-34; 6:53-56;
James 5:14-16

Facing a difficult decision

1 Kings 3; Esther 4-7; Psalm 139;
Daniel 2:14-23; Colossians 3:12-17

Facing homelessness

Psalm 90:1-2; Isaiah 65:17-25;
Lamentations 3:19-24; Luke 9:57-62;
Revelations 21:1-4

Facing life alone

1 Corinthians 7:25-38; 1 Corinthians
12:1-31

Facing a trial or lawsuit

Psalm 26; Isaiah 50:4-11;
Luke 18:1-8

Losing your property or possessions

Job 1:13-22; 42: 7-17; Isaiah 30:19-26;
41:17-20; Romans 8:18-39

Managing your time

Proverbs 12:11; 28:19; Mark 37; Luke 21:34-36; 1 Timothy 4:11-16; Titus 3:8-14

Overcoming addiction

Psalms 40:1-5, 11-17; 116:1-7
Proverbs 23:29-35; Ephesians 4:22-24; 2 Corinthians 5:16-21

Overcoming prejudice

Matthew 7:1-5; Acts 10:34-36
Galatians 3:26-29; Ephesians 2:11-22; Colossians 3:5-11; James 2:1-13

Overcoming procrastination

Matthew 22:1-14; 25:1-13
2 Corinthians 6:1-2

Respecting civil authorities

Mark 12:13-17; Romans 13:1-7
Titus 3:1-2; 1 Peter 2:13-17

Retiring from your job

Numbers 6:24-26; Psalm 145;
Matthew 25:31-46; Romans 12:1-2;
Philippians 3: 12-21;
2 Peter 1:2

Seeking God's help

Psalms 5; 57; 86; 121; 130;
Psalm 119:169-176; Matthew 7:7-12

Seeking salvation

John 3:1-21; Romans 1:16-17
Romans 3:21-31; 5:1-11; 10:5-13
Ephesians 1:3-14; 2:1-10

Moving into a new home

Psalms 127:1-2; Proverbs 24:3-4; John 13:32-14:1-7; Ephesians 3:14-21; Revelation 3:20-21

Overcoming a grudge

Leviticus 19:17-18; Matthew 5:23-26
Luke 6:27-36; Ephesians 4:25-32

Overcoming pride

Psalms 131; Mark 9:33-37; Luke 14:7-11
18:9-14; 22:24-27; Romans 12:14-16;
1 Corinthians 1:18-31; 2 Corinthians 12:1-10

Raising children

Proverbs 22:6; Ephesians 6:4
Colossians 3:21

Respecting parents

Exodus 20:12; Proverbs 23:22
Ephesians 6:1-3; Colossians 3:20

Seeking forgiveness

Psalms 32:1-5; 51; Proverbs 28:13;
Joel 2:12-17; Matthew 6:14-15; Luke 15;
Philemon; Hebrews 4:14-16;
1 John 1:5-10

Seeking justice

Psalms 10; 17; 75; 94; Isaiah 42:1-7; 61:1-9; Amos 5:21-24;
Habakkuk 1:1-2:4

Seeking strength

Psalms 46; 138; Isaiah 40:27-31
Isaiah 51:12-16; Ephesians 6:10-20
2 Thessalonians 2:16-17

Seeking truth

Psalm 119:153-160;
John 14:6-14; 16:4b-15;
1 Timothy 2:1-7
John 8:31-47

Start a new job

Proverbs 11:3; 22:29; Romans
12:3-11; 1 Thessalonians 5:12-18
2 Thessalonians 3:6-13;
1 Peter 4:7-11

Understanding your relationship with others

Deuteronomy 5:16-21; Proverbs
3:27-35; Matthew 18:15-17, 21-35;
Romans 14:13-23; 15:1-6; Galatians
6:1-10; Colossians 3:12-17;
1 John 4:7-12

Worrying about growing old

Psalm 37:23-29; Isaiah 46:3-4

Sharing your gifts

Exodus 35:20-29; Malachi 3:6-12
Luke 21:1-4; Acts 2:43-47; 4:32-37
Romans 12:9-13; 1 Corinthians 16:1-4
2 Corinthians 8:1-15; 9:6-15

Understanding your relationship with God

Deuteronomy 5:1-22; Psalm 139;
John 15:1-17; Romans 5:1-11; 8:1-17

Worrying about the future

Isaiah 35; 60; Jeremiah 29:10-14
1 Peter 1:3-5; Revelations 21:1-8

Worry about money

Proverbs 11:7; Ecclesiastes 5:10-20
Matthew 6:24-34; Luke 12:13-21;
1 Timothy 6:6-10

WHAT THE BIBLE SAYS ABOUT GOD'S FORGIVENESS

Every person is separated from God because of sin.

Isaiah 59:1-15
Romans 3:9-20
Romans 5:12-21
Ecclesiastes 7:20
Romans 7:14-25

God has always sought to form a close relationship with people.

Exodus 19:3b-8
Jeremiah 31:31-34
Isaiah 54:1-10

1 Peter 1:1-10

1 John 3:1-10

God has reached out to people in a personal way by sending Jesus Christ.

Colossians 1:15-23

Romans 5:1-11

1 Peter 2:10-25

John 3:1-21

2 Timothy 1:3-10

Ephesians 2:1-10

God's forgiveness through Jesus Christ is available to every person.

Psalms 51:1-17

1 John 1:5-10

Romans 10:5-13

Psalms 32:1-11

Romans 8:31-39

Romans 3:21-26

New life in Christ calls a person to live in a Christ-like way.

Romans 6:1-14

Matthew 20:20-28

Ephesians 4:17-32

Galatians 5:16-26

1 John 4:7-21

Romans 12:1-21

EXPERIENCING TROUBLESOME FEELINGS

Afraid?

Psalms 27; 91; Isaiah 41:5-13;

Mark 4:35-41; Hebrews 13:5,6;

1 John 4:13-18

Afraid of death?

Psalms 23; 63:1-8; John 6:35-40;

Romans 8:18-39; 1 Corinthians 15:35-57;

2 Corinthians 5:1-10; 2 Timothy 1:8-10

Angry?

Proverbs 15:1; Matthew 5:21-24;

Romans 12:17-21; James 1:19-21

Ephesians 4:26-32

Anxious? Worried?

Psalms 25; Matthew 6:24-34; 10:26-31

1 Peter 1:3-5; 5:7

Depressed?

Psalms 16; 43; 130; John 3:14-17
Isaiah 61:1-4; Jeremiah 15:10-20
Lamentations 3:55-57;
Ephesians 3:14-21

Discouraged?

Psalms 34; Isaiah 12:1-6;
Romans 15:13; Hebrews 6:9-12;
2 Corinthians 4:16-18;
Philippians 4:10-13;
Colossians 1:9-14

Frustrated?

Job 21:1-16; 24:1-17; 36:1-26;
Matthew 7:13,14

Insecure? Lacking confidence?

Deuteronomy 31:1-8;
Psalm 73:21-26; 108;
Philippians 4:10-20; 1 John 3:19-24

Lonely?

Psalms 22; 42; John 14:15-31a

Rejected?

Psalms 38; Isaiah 52:13-53:12;
Luke 4:16-30; John 15:18-16:4;
Ephesians 1:13-14;
1 Peter 2:1-10

Tempted by sex?

2 Samuel 11:1-12:25;
1 Corinthians 6:12-20;
Galatians 5:16-26

Feeling useless? Inferior?

Isaiah 6:1-8; Jeremiah 1:4-10;
Galatians 1:11-24;
Ephesians 4:1-16; 1 Peter 2:4-10

Disappointed? Let down?

Psalms 55; 62:1-8; Jeremiah 20:7-18

Doubting your faith in God?

Psalms 8; 146; Proverbs 30:5;
Matthew 7:7-12; Luke 17:5,6;
John 20:24-31; 1 John 5:13-15;
Hebrews 11; Romans 4:13-25

Impatient?

Psalms 13; 37:1-7; 40:1-5; James 5:7-11
Ecclesiastes 3:1-15;
Lamentations 3:25-33; Hebrews 6:13-20

Jealous?

Psalms 49; Proverbs 23:17; James 3:13-18

Overwhelmed? Experiencing stress?

Isaiah 55:1-9; Matthew 11:25-30;
John 4:1-30; 2 Corinthians 6:3-10;
Revelations 22:17

Tempted?

Psalms 19:12-14; 141; Luke 4:1-13;
Hebrews 2:11-18; Hebrews 4:14-16;
James 1:12-18

Tired? Weary?

Psalms 3:5-6; 4:4-8; Isaiah 35:1-10;
Matthew 11:25-30; 2 Thessalonians 3:16;
Hebrews 4:1-11

Vengeful?

Matthew 5:38-42; Romans 12:17-21



VQP C



VQP C



VQP C



Spirit World

In the quest to understand more of God, His Word, and mankind's relationship to his being created in the Image of God, there is a never-ending thirst to discover everything of which the Holy Spirit will permit me to possess knowledge. Thus, it would seem only natural to have some knowledge of the existence of mankind after passing through this preparatory walk upon the earth. Our existence upon the earth is but a blink of an eye, in relationship to the existence in the next life. Therefore, it makes good sense to me to know something about the beings that are already there, what they have done and how they have caused an impact upon the condition of mankind as a whole. So, we have extracts from *Spirit World*.

The Scriptures are full of the supernatural! The only cure for the materialism of the present day is to discover what the scriptures reveal in relationship to the spirit world. There is but a step from the natural world to the spirit world, and the dividing veil is our fleshy physical body. The heavens are peopled with spirit beings. In general terms, when we speak of spirit beings we think of angels. For the most part this is true for even the demons and fallen angels were obedient angels at one time. Thus in our view of angels (spirit beings) there are two broad categories, good and evil. There are two classes of angels. Cherubim are the fighters and soldiers. Example: Genesis 3:24, *So He drove out the man; and He placed cherubim at the east of the garden of Eden, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to guard the way to the tree of life.*

Seraphim are the administrators and messengers. An example: in the book of Isaiah the prophet. Isaiah 6:1-7, *In the year that King Uzziah died, I saw the Lord sitting on a throne, high and lifted up, and the train of His robe filled the temple. Above it stood seraphim; each one had six wings: with two he covered his face, with two he covered his feet, and with two he flew. And one cried to another and said: "Holy, holy, holy is the LORD of hosts; The whole earth is full of His glory!" And the posts of the door were shaken by the voice of him who cried out, and the house was filled with smoke.*

So I said: "Woe is me, for I am undone! Because I am a man of unclean lips, And I dwell in the midst of a people of unclean lips; For my eyes have seen the King, The LORD of hosts."

Then one of the seraphim flew to me, having in his hand a live coal which he had taken with the tongs from the altar. And he touched my mouth with it, and said: "Behold, this has touched your lips; Your iniquity is taken away, And your sin purged."

One of the principal functions of the angels is to govern. We can see in the following that this may be in the form of good or evil and angels (both good and bad) are said to be over principalities, powers, age rulers of darkness, and in charge of wicked spirits. Ephesians 6:12, *For we do not wrestle against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this age, against spiritual hosts of wickedness in the heavenly places.*

Angels may be over thrones or dominions. Colossians 1:16, *For by Him all things were created that are in heaven and that are on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or principalities or powers. All things were created through Him and for Him.* There are also fallen angels. 2 Peter 2:4, *For if God did not spare the angels who sinned, but cast them down to Hell and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved for judgment.* Some fallen angels may be held in prison. 1 Peter 3:18-20, *For Christ also suffered once for sins, the just for the unjust, that He might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh but made alive by the Spirit, by whom also He went and preached to the spirits in prison, who formerly were disobedient, when once the Divine longsuffering waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was being prepared, in which a few, that is, eight souls, were saved through water.* Finally, we may know them as demons, and seducing (deceiving) spirits. 1 Timothy 4:1, *Now the Spirit expressly says that in latter times some will depart from the faith, giving heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons.*

The angels are innumerable in number. Hebrews 12:22, *But you have come to Mount Zion and to the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, to an innumerable company of angels.* They are mighty in power but not almighty. 2 Thessalonians 1:7, *And to give you who are troubled rest with us when the Lord Jesus is revealed from heaven with His mighty angels.* They excel in strength. One angel destroyed 185,000 of the Assyrian army in a single night. An angel rolled away the stone from the tomb of Christ, and one angel shall bind Satan and cast him into the Bottomless Pit. They are glorious beings. Luke 9:26, *“For whoever is ashamed of Me and My words, of him the Son of Man will be ashamed when He comes in His own glory, and in His Father’s, and of the holy angels.”* Angels have great knowledge, but are not Omniscient. **This is an important point that must be understood and remembered.** If you want to address Satan, or any of his demons, **you must do it directly** because they cannot read your thoughts as God can. Therefore, if you want to protect yourself, your family, your home, etc. you must speak out loud and boldly rebuke Satan in the name of Jesus and tell him that he is bound and cannot harm you.

Are there guardian angels? This is the point about angels that probably every mother wants to know. I can only tell you what the Bible says and give you the following verses of Scripture. Psalms 91:11-13, *For He shall give His angels charge over you, to keep you in all your ways. In their hands they shall bear you up, lest you dash your foot against a stone. You shall tread upon the lion and the cobra, the young lion and the serpent you shall trample underfoot.*

The angels are ministering spirits to them who are heirs of salvation. Hebrews 1:13-14, *But to which of the angels has He ever said: “Sit at My right hand, till I make your enemies your footstool”? Are they not all ministering spirits sent forth to minister for those who will inherit salvation?* Angels are the executioners of God’s wrath on the wicked. 2 Thessalonians 1:7-8, *And to give you who are troubled rest with us when the Lord Jesus is revealed from heaven with His mighty angels, in flaming fire taking vengeance on those who do not know God, and on those who do not obey the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ.*

Angels will gather the elect of Israel from the four corners of the earth. Matthew 24:31, *“And He will send His angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they will gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.”* Angels are commissioned to supply the physical needs of God’s people. Matthew 4:11, *Then the devil left Him, and behold, angels came and ministered to Him.* 1 Kings 19:4-8, *But he himself went a day’s journey into the wilderness, and came and sat down under a broom tree. And he prayed that he might die, and said, “It is enough! Now, LORD, take my life, for I am no better than my fathers!”*

Then as he lay and slept under a broom tree, suddenly an angel touched him, and said to him, “Arise and eat.” Then he looked, and there by his head was a cake baked on coals, and a jar of water. So he ate and drank, and lay down again.

And the angel of the LORD came back the second time, and touched him, and said, “Arise and eat, because the journey is too great for you.” So he arose, and ate and drank; and he went in the strength of that food forty days and forty nights as far as Horeb, the mountain of God.

The Whole Truth, nothing more, nothing less!

The desire of this chapter is to get you, the reader to think. We attempt to do this with the pure simple truth that is contained in the Bible. NOTE: When I use the plural in this section I am speaking of three men who have worked together on the genealogy of Jesus, Royce Burns, Robert McMullan, Sr. and myself. We do not interject dogma, spirituality or theology into this. We are simply giving you the words of the Bible in a manner that we hope you understand.

In our view, the key to understanding the Bible rests in the genealogy that is recorded therein. By, and through, this genealogy the reality of history becomes a matter of fact. Once this is achieved, the reality that these are real people who lived real lives on the earth becomes the next step. When this is realized, the next step is that the stories of the Bible are true.

We have also understood that there are stumbling blocks in the way to understanding the Bible and we believe we have been shown how to remove some of them. That is our goal; the things that we will show you are in the Bible and not from us. It is the history of mankind that is there and nothing more. Before we begin there is one other point that we would like to make. Interpretations of the Bible are like rumors, everyone wants to hear the story, but once told it seems to get changed by that person when told to another. Everyone is an individual, with the ability to interpret the Bible as they see it as a free moral agent of God.

We are not attempting to interpret anything. We are using the Bible as the verses of the New King James Version are written to show you these keys. In a statement above we indicated that the key to understanding the Bible rests in understanding the genealogy of the Bible. We really must clarify even this statement. There are many genealogies in the Bible but there is only one that needs to be fully understood, the genealogy of Jesus.

Who is this man named Jesus? Is He a real person and are the stories in the Bible real history? Yes! In both cases, the Bible is the early history of the Hebrew people and the facts recorded should lead one to understand that the man we know as Jesus was a real, living, breathing person.

Over the course of many years we have seen other genealogies presented as being the genealogy of Jesus. It seems strange to us that each one of the three have worked on our own version of the genealogy of Jesus. When we finally met one another it was these genealogies that opened the door to our understanding. Our genealogies about Jesus were different from all the rest and we immediately realized that we had something different for understanding from that of the mainstream.

We have studied each other's material and have drawn certain conclusions that we now desire to share with others. First and foremost, we ask that you set your traditions aside. Traditions have their place, but when they read contrary to what is recorded in the Bible we feel that they become very misleading and represent one of the obstacles of which we spoke.

There are several places in the King James Bible which have this person begetting another, who begat another, and so on. There is no wonder there are so few people who have taken the time to break the seal on this hidden knowledge and study what is there. Ancient English is not easy to understand and we certainly feel it becomes a work of love to even attempt to understand what is there. Thus, we have taken the New King James version to be our source of information for this study.

It is at the name David that we can find the first obstacle. There is a genealogy for Jesus in both Matthew and in Luke and they do not match. What is the answer?

There are several answers to this question. First, the Bible tells us: Jesus was born from a virgin; He must be in the line from King David; He was of the house of Judah. We know from reading the Matthew account that Joseph descends from King David and that King David was from the house of Judah; so that portion of the prophecy is already fulfilled. The question becomes: How is Jesus born of a virgin and still in the lineage of King David?

We find the answer in the text itself. Let's look at the Matthew lineage. Matthew 1:16,

And Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ.

From this statement we have understood that the Matthew account is the genealogy of Joseph. We see that Joseph's line goes back to King David in verse 6: *And Jesse begat David the king; and David the king begat Solomon by her who had been the wife of Uriah.*

We still have a problem! If this is the line of Joseph how does Jesus fit into it to get back to King David? Look again at Matthew 1:16, ". . . *Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ.*" If God's Word is true, we have to find another way for Jesus to be in the lineage back to King David. Ultimately the only way for that to be is through Mary, the mother of Jesus and a virgin. It is at this point that we have another stumbling block to enter. We see that many people tie the lines of Matthew and Luke together and indicate that both are the genealogy of Joseph. We feel that we must show you where this comes from and then challenge your thinking. In the verses of the Gospel of Luke we find recorded in Luke 3:23: *And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, which was the son of Heli.*

The problem and the solution both rest in this one verse. We see that it says, ". . . , *being the son of Joseph, which was the son of Heli.*" This is the manner many people read this verse. They tie this lineage in Luke and the lineage in the Gospel of Matthew together and say they both represent the lineage of Joseph. Now go back and read this verse the way it is recorded, ". . . , *being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, which was the son of Heli.*"

When you read the verse as it is written there is a question that should come to everyone's mind. What does, *as was supposed*, mean? Doesn't that tell you that the normal thinking is that Joseph is the father of Jesus? Behold that is not the case! Therefore, *as was supposed* was interjected. Can this really be the lineage for Joseph?

There is another answer that comes into view for this question. What about common sense? Can you say that **you** have two natural fathers? Then why is it we have permitted traditions to attempt to tell us that Joseph had two fathers? Every chart on the genealogy of Jesus, and every person, who ties these two lines together is saying that Joseph had two different natural fathers.

You still don't think that is what is being said? Very well go back and look at the two verses we are talking about, Matthew 1:16 and Luke 3:23. Doesn't Matthew 1:16 tell you that the father for Joseph is Jacob. Doesn't Luke 3:23 tell you that the father for Joseph is Heli? How can this be? Either we have the greatest of all miracles of the Bible, that a man can have two natural fathers, or we are seeing two different lineages presented.

There is another obstacle inserted at this point. For failure to understand the separation of the two lineages, and the traditional creation that Joseph had two natural fathers, we have even a more pressing question that is presented in some denominations and on some genealogy charts for the lineage of Jesus. Who are Anna and Joachin?

Since the separation of the lineages is not accepted, by some denominations, there are those who have injected parents for Mary, the mother of Jesus, and name them Anna and Joachin. It is strange to us that there is no mention of these two in any verse in Scripture and even stranger that these two names did not come into the vogue of tradition until the 600s CE.

If this is the case we must once again use our common sense. Is tradition now trying to say that for six hundred years Mary did not have parents? Wouldn't these traditions also be communicating that

Jesus' birth did not fulfill prophecy? The reason for asking this is: If the lineages (Matthew and Luke) are for Joseph, how does Jesus tie back to King David through his mother? To assign parents for Mary would only make the Messiah a lie, for the simple reason that there is no lineage for Jesus through the virgin birth on his mother's side. Think about this! How did Mary conceive?

Once again, the answer rests in those three little words in Luke 3:23, “. . . (*as was supposed*) . . .” The account in Luke represents the lineage of Mary. This line goes back to Nathan, Solomon's brother. Solomon and Nathan were both sons of David and Bathsheba.

That answers our first step in understanding. We said that we are not injecting our own theology into this work. It seems to sound that we are because we are interpreting verses from the Bible. We do not feel that way. We are only asking you to read what is there, in total, and to think with common sense not listening to traditions that have been passed down.

The next obstacle in the understanding of the genealogy of Jesus is the name Zerubbabel. This name appears in both lineages, the Matthew account and the Luke account. Notice as you read the Matthew account in verse 12 the following: *And after they were brought to Babylon, Jechoniah begat Shealtiel; and Shealtiel begat Zerubbabel.*

Now, turn over to Luke and read in Luke 3:27 the following: *The son of Joannas, the son of Rhesa, the son of Zerubbabel, the son of Shealtiel, the son of Neri.*

In every work that we have seen, outside of our own, we find that the writer, and/or researcher, has tied the lineages together also at the name Zerubbabel. Once again, we must ask if the possibility exists for a man to have two natural fathers? In this case the situation is not even in agreement with the traditional presentation. The person that would have to have two natural fathers is not Zerubbabel, instead his father *Shealtiel*.

Look at the verses that we are referencing and what each verse says. In Matthew the verse, again reads, *And after they were brought to Babylon, Jechoniah begat Shealtiel; and Shealtiel begat Zerubbabel.* Once again, turn over to Luke 3:27 and read the following: *The son of Joannas, the son of Rhesa, the son of Zerubbabel, the son of Shealtiel, the son of Neri.*

Wouldn't the two fathers of Shealtiel be Jechoniah and Neri? We are going to say this again, either that is what tradition and/or those who present the information in this manner are saying, or there is no way that these two people are one and the same. What would common sense tell you if you were researching your own ancestry and in both your mother's line and your father's line there is a person named John. Do you jump to the conclusion that John is the same person and is in both your mother and your father's lineage?

In like manner why do you accept the presentation of tradition without even a question? How can a person have two separate and distinct natural fathers? The joke upon those who accept tradition is that the tie point is established because of one word, signet and doesn't even refer to the person that would have to be the miracle person. The tie person in the traditional presentation is Zerubbabel and not his father Shealtiel.

Once again there must be an answer that is in the text itself. We feel that there is in the Matthew account. Doesn't it read in Matthew 1:12, “*And after they were brought to Babylon, . . .*” It doesn't read that in the Luke account. If we are speaking about the same person wouldn't this either be a good identifier, or a means to distinguish between two different people?

There is still one part that is missing that mankind plays with so much. Yet they have not taken the time to sit down and consider adding this one factor to the words of the Bible. Where is the factor of time? We should understand that this is not an issue to God. Time is an issue to mankind. Yet we do not want to see that when time is added to Biblical text the rest of history starts to fall into its proper place.

We will admit that there is yet another stumbling block that even we are not sure how to answer. What dating system are we to use when mankind speaks of time. We can find different dates for different events in different reference works. What may appear in one encyclopedia may not appear in another, and what may appear in the history studied in one part of the world may differ in another. What is the truth and what is to be the standard?

After many hours of research we have come together with a common thought that the standard we desire to use is the Bible itself with the birth of Abraham in 2166 BCE as defined by many sources. We now have a starting point that represents a distinct point on the time line of history that allows us to move both forward and backward from this point. When we do this we can clearly see the connection between the people of the Bible and the events of history. We see the occurrence of civilized man in the Indus Valley after the Tower of Babel. We can see the time of the flood and the history of God's people after that date.

Once we added our information together, the Bible became clear in its presentation of the history of the Hebrew people, and we understood that these are real stories, about real people who lived real lives. The final individual all these stories were leading to was the man we call Jesus. We understood what Luke wrote in the book of Acts concerning Paul's statement that mankind had only one type blood (human blood). Acts 17:26, *And He has made from one blood every nation of men to dwell on all the face of the earth. . . .*

We understood the original promised covenant between God and Abraham, telling of God's remarkable promise to Abraham that all races of mankind would be blessed through him. Think about that! One promise from God to Abraham that all the people of the earth would be blessed through him.

The shame of the deception is that in many quarters it appears no one wants to be associated with the Hebrews, yet we are all blessed by and through the Hebrews. That means every Christian, every Moslem, every American, every race, every color and every creed upon the earth. There is none left out.

We desire for no one to be deceived; yet we understand that this is Satan's mission, to deceive the Church as much as possible. We believe that we have been blessed to understand these truths and we desire to make them plain to you so you may think, read, and draw your own conclusion from Biblical text and forego hidden traditions that have never been proven.

The Law Given to Moses

It is now time to take a serious look at the contribution that Moses gave to us. We should understand that everyone of the Hebrew nation was not happy with Moses. We actually could take Abraham Lincoln's quote about pleasing people and apply it to Moses: the people were just not pleased all the time.

Even so there's an article that Moses carried off the mountain that we need to look at and we can find the information recorded in Exodus 20 and in Deuteronomy 5. Exodus 20:1-17, *And God spoke all these words, saying: "I am the LORD your God, who brought you out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage. You shall have no other gods before Me. You shall not make for yourself a carved image, or any likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth; you shall not bow down to them nor serve them. For I, the LORD your God, am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers on the children to the third and fourth generations of those who hate Me, but showing mercy to thousands, to those who love Me and keep My commandments. You shall not take the name of the LORD your God in vain, for the LORD will not hold him guiltless who takes His name in vain. Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy. Six days you shall labor and do all your work, but the seventh day is the Sabbath of the LORD your God. In it you shall do no work: you, nor your son, nor your daughter, nor your male servant, nor your female servant, nor your cattle, nor your stranger who is within your gates. For in six days the LORD made the heavens and the earth, the sea, and all that is in them, and rested the seventh day. Therefore the LORD blessed the Sabbath day and hallowed it. Honor your father and your mother, that your days may be long upon the land which the LORD your God is giving you. You shall not murder. You shall not commit adultery. You shall not steal. You shall not bear false witness against your neighbor. You shall not covet your neighbor's house; you shall not covet your neighbor's wife, nor his male servant, nor his female servant, nor his ox, nor his donkey, nor anything that is your neighbor's."*

Stated slightly different we find the following in Deuteronomy 5:1-22, *And Moses called all Israel, and said to them: "Hear, O Israel, the statutes and judgments which I speak in your hearing today, that you may learn them and be careful to observe them. The LORD our God made a covenant with us in Horeb. The LORD did not make this covenant with our fathers, but with us, those who are here today, all of us who are alive. The LORD talked with you face to face on the mountain from the midst of the fire. I stood between the LORD and you at that time, to declare to you the word of the LORD; for you were afraid because of the fire, and you did not go up the mountain."*

He said: "I am the LORD your God who brought you out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage. You shall have no other gods before Me. You shall not make for yourself a carved image; any likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth; you shall not bow down to them nor serve them. For I, the LORD your God, am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children to the third and fourth generations of those who hate Me, but showing mercy to thousands, to those who love Me and keep My commandments. You shall not take the name of the LORD your God in vain, for the LORD will not hold him guiltless who takes His name in vain. Observe the Sabbath day, to keep it holy, as the LORD your God commanded you. Six days you shall labor and do all your work, but the seventh day is the Sabbath of the LORD your God. In it you shall do no work: you, nor your son, nor your daughter, nor your male servant, nor your female servant, nor your ox, nor your donkey, nor any of your cattle, nor your stranger who is within your gates, that your male servant and your female servant may rest as well as you. And remember that you were a slave in the land of Egypt, and the LORD your God brought you out from there by a mighty hand and by an outstretched arm; therefore the LORD your God commanded you to keep the Sabbath

day. Honor your father and your mother, as the LORD your God has commanded you, that your days may be long, and that it may be well with you in the land which the LORD your God is giving you. You shall not murder. You shall not commit adultery. You shall not steal. You shall not bear false witness against your neighbor. You shall not covet your neighbor's wife; and you shall not desire your neighbor's house, his field, his male servant, his female servant, his ox, his donkey, or anything that is your neighbor's."

"These words the LORD spoke to all your assembly, in the mountain from the midst of the fire, the cloud, and the thick darkness, with a loud voice; and He added no more. And He wrote them on two tablets of stone and gave them to me." Either way we normally call these commands the Ten Commandments.

Currently in today's world I think it is a shame that we Americans have permitted Satan to blind us to the point that we allow groups such as the American Civil Liberties Union (ACLU) to challenge the posting of this document. The ACLU indicates the posting of this document in schools, courtrooms and on monuments on government owned land has something to do with religion and therefore we must observe a separation between church and state. Pray tell, how did we become so confused over what this document really is?

First, and foremost this is not a religious document! **Period!** This is a moral document and nothing more. Why is it that because these words are found in the Bible that they have suddenly become a religious document? The instructions on how to construct the Tabernacle, the Temple or the observances performed by the priests would be religious by their very nature. But how is it when most of the wording in the Ten Commandments could be easily found in the statutes of every state and commonwealth in the union that we call this a religious document? Don't we have laws that state stealing, lying and adultery are punishable crimes? Don't we have state agencies that protect our youngest and oldest members of society? And if you really get down to those commands pertaining to the observance of the Sabbath, did you find anything that says you must be of one particular faith or the observance must be on such and such a day?

I've heard the ACLU state in open court that this is a religious document because it is supported by the Christian faith and no other. Isn't that a total scream! The document wasn't even given to those of the Christian faith. At the time it was given I'd be willing to say that you could take well over a million people off on a one-on-one discussion of their religion and they wouldn't even know about what it was you were asking questions. The Hebrew people did not see these instructions as being relevant to their Jewish faith. They saw them as being moral instructions from God. Now, are you going to try to take this further and tell me: therefore, anything written that implies it is an instruction from a deity is religious? Somehow I would say that there would be much more confusion among mankind if that was the case. Every instruction from any one deity would not be considered binding upon another group who did not adhere to the teaching of that deity. Thus for the sake of sanity within any moral society these are not religious teachings, they are moral teachings.

There is another question that I must address. Why is it that Christians seem to have this idea they are not to live by the laws that God handed down through Moses? How many times have you heard a Christian say, "I'm a New Testament believer, that doesn't apply to me," or "We're a New Testament church and the old covenant doesn't apply to us?" Once again, I'm lead to believe there are many who missed the point. Christians may be under the New Covenant given by Jesus but that does not exempt them from the principles of the law. Understand this statement! Jesus himself uttered five of the commandments of Moses verbatim. If the principles of the law do not apply under the new covenant, I have several verses to show you to provoke thought.

Let us look at the statement of Jesus in Matthew 5:17, *Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill.* How does an individual fulfill any law?

Isn't it in the observance of that law? Don't we, as a society have many laws, that we call statues, written at town, city, county, state and federal level? Don't we as citizens of that town, city, county, state or country fulfill the law by respecting the law, observing the law and by obeying the law. We break the law when we do not obey the law. Isn't that exactly what Moses gave to the Hebrews at Mount Sinai? Isn't that what Jesus meant when He said he came *not to destroy, but to fulfill*? Seriously, is this a religious instruction or a moral instruction? It is time that mankind figured out that to be righteous in God's eye is to be moral in man's eye by following the laws that have been handed down. Stop and think, if mankind had followed the laws given by Moses there would have been no reason to issue further laws (on heaven-only-knows what subjects). Jesus did not come to set up a religion: He came, as heir to the throne, to illustrate to mankind how to worship God the Father by being obedient to the law and to the teachings of the prophets.

For the sake of illustration let's go through the teachings of Jesus to see which of the Ten Commandments He also taught. The first commandment is "*You shall have no other gods before Me.*" For this illustration I'll show you the two verses that give the Ten Commandments in the Old Testament and also the verse or verses that Jesus taught. For those commands that Jesus spoke verbatim I'll underline the commandment number.

Commandment One: Exodus 20:3, "*You shall have no other gods before Me.*" Deuteronomy 5:7, "*You shall have no other gods before Me.*" Jesus used, thus taught, this commandment in the following manner; Matthew 4:10, *Then Jesus said to him, "Away with you, Satan! For it is written, 'You shall worship the LORD your God, and Him only you shall serve.'*"

Commandment Two: Exodus 20:4, "*You shall not make for yourself a carved image, or any likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth.*" Deuteronomy 5:8, "*You shall not make for yourself a carved image—any likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth.*" Jesus never used this statement directly, according to the Gospels, and the one verse that I can come up with is the same one that He spoke to Satan. Matthew 4:10, *Then Jesus said to him, "Away with you, Satan! For it is written, 'You shall worship the LORD your God, and Him only you shall serve.'"* Jesus also taught the following in Matthew 22:20-21, *And He said to them, "Whose image and inscription is this?"*

They said to Him, "Caesar's."

And He said to them, "Render therefore to Caesar the things that are Caesar's, and to God the things that are God's."

Commandment Three: Exodus 20:7, "*You shall not take the name of the LORD your God in vain, for the LORD will not hold him guiltless who takes His name in vain.*" Deuteronomy 5:11, "*You shall not take the name of the LORD your God in vain, for the LORD will not hold him guiltless who takes His name in vain.*" Once again, we have one of the commandments that Jesus did not speak verbatim, however, Jesus did teach the following: Matthew 5:33-37, "*Again you have heard that it was said to those of old, 'You shall not swear falsely, but shall perform your oaths to the Lord.' But I say to you, do not swear at all: neither by heaven, for it is God's throne; nor by the earth, for it is His footstool; nor by Jerusalem, for it is the city of the great King. Nor shall you swear by your head, because you cannot make one hair white or black. But let your 'Yes' be 'Yes,' and your 'No,' 'No.' For whatever is more than these is from the evil one.*" Also in Matthew 23:16-22, "*Woe to you, blind guides, who say, 'Whoever swears by the temple, it is nothing; but whoever swears by the gold of the temple, he is obliged to perform it.' Fools and blind! For which is greater, the gold or the temple that*

sanctifies the gold? And, 'Whoever swears by the altar, it is nothing; but whoever swears by the gift that is on it, he is obliged to perform it.' Fools and blind! For which is greater, the gift or the altar that sanctifies the gift? Therefore he who swears by the altar, swears by it and by all things on it. He who swears by the temple, swears by it and by Him who dwells in it. And he who swears by heaven, swears by the throne of God and by Him who sits on it." And also in Matthew 26:63-64, But Jesus kept silent. And the high priest answered and said to Him, "I put You under oath by the living God: Tell us if You are the Christ, the Son of God!"

Jesus said to him, "It is as you said. Nevertheless, I say to you, hereafter you will see the Son of Man sitting at the right hand of the Power, and coming on the clouds of heaven."

Commandment Four: Exodus 20:8, *"Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy."* Deuteronomy 5:12, *"Observe the Sabbath day, to keep it holy, as the LORD your God commanded you."* In reading the Gospels one finds that Jesus did many things on the Sabbath, in fact, it was one of the major reasons that the Jews wanted to kill Jesus. Jesus spoke the following in Mark 2:27, *"The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath."* We can also see the manner of the Jewish rulers in the following: Luke 13:14, *"But the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because Jesus had healed on the Sabbath; and he said to the crowd, "There are six days on which men ought to work; therefore come and be healed on them, and not on the Sabbath day."* Today we see great conflict among mankind over the Sabbath. Is it on Friday, or Saturday or is it Sunday that makes the Sabbath? What if we observed the statement that there are six days to work and one day to honor God? If we followed the instructions as they are given we must honor the Sabbath as being our Saturday.

Commandment Five: Exodus 20:12, *"Honor your father and your mother, that your days may be long upon the land which the LORD your God is giving you."* Deuteronomy 5:16, *"Honor your father and your mother, as the LORD your God has commanded you, that your days may be long, and that it may be well with you in the land which the LORD your God is giving you."* This one command was quoted more by Jesus than any other and can be found verbatim in five different verses. Matthew 15:4, *"For God commanded, saying, 'Honor your father and your mother; and, He who curses father or mother, let him be put to death.'" Matthew 19:19, "Honor your father and your mother, and, you shall love your neighbor as yourself."* Mark 7:10, *"For Moses said, "Honor your father and your mother; and, He who curses father or mother, let him be put to death.'" Mark 10:19, "You know the commandments: Do not commit adultery, Do not murder, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Do not defraud, Honor your father and your mother."* Luke 18:20, *"You know the commandments: 'Do not commit adultery, Do not murder, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Honor your father and your mother.'" "*

Commandment Six: Exodus 20:13, *"You shall not murder."* Deuteronomy 5:17, *"You shall not murder."* Jesus spoke the following: Matthew 5:21, *"You have heard that it was said to those of old, you shall not murder, and whoever murders will be in danger of the judgment."* Matthew 19:18, *He said to Him, "Which ones?"*

Jesus said, "You shall not murder, You shall not commit adultery, You shall not steal, You shall not bear false witness." Paul also spoke about this commandment in the following: Romans 13:9 *"For the commandments, "You shall not commit adultery, You shall not murder, You shall not steal, You shall not bear false witness, You shall not covet, and if there is any other commandment, are all summed up in this saying, namely, You shall love your neighbor as yourself."*

I must ask another question: Why does mankind have so much confusion over this one commandment? One can find division between people, between denominations and certainly between

church and state over this one command. You don't think so! Okay, explain to me why there is so much said on both sides of the capital punishment issue or over abortion rights. If you take the stand that both are murder and against the commandment, I have to raise another question. Why did God direct the Hebrews to kill, murder if you will, complete groups of people? There is a great problem in the argument! Either God does not follow His own laws and He is a liar or there is another answer. Let's reverse the statement and answer the second point first. We find in the following two verses that God cannot lie. Titus 1:2, *In hope of eternal life which God, who cannot lie, promised before time began.* Hebrews 6:18, *That by two unchanging things, in which it is impossible for God to lie, we might have strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold of the hope set before us.*

Now, let's address the other point. There are different translations of the Bible and different words used in both Greek and Hebrew that can mean kill. If you view the NIV, NRSV or the NKJV the word used in this command is murder. If you view the KJV verse for this command the word used is kill. To further explain the differences look at Strong's Concordance. In looking under the word kill there are no less than 14 different words that translate kill (8 in the Hebrew and 6 in the Greek). Understandably when there are 14 various words translated to kill it would seem that murder is the more correct translation than that used in the King James; however, by so doing this the verses where God directs the Hebrews to kill places a conflict in the minds of men. We can even see that this was the reason that King Saul was removed from the throne. 1 Samuel 15:16-23, *Then Samuel said to Saul, "Be quiet! And I will tell you what the LORD said to me last night."*

And he said to him, "Speak on."

So Samuel said, "When you were little in your own eyes, were you not head of the tribes of Israel? And did not the LORD anoint you king over Israel? Now the LORD sent you on a mission, and said, 'Go, and utterly destroy the sinners, the Amalekites, and fight against them until they are consumed.' Why then did you not obey the voice of the LORD? Why did you swoop down on the spoil, and do evil in the sight of the LORD?"

And Saul said to Samuel, "But I have obeyed the voice of the LORD, and gone on the mission on which the LORD sent me, and brought back Agag king of Amalek; I have utterly destroyed the Amalekites. But the people took of the plunder, sheep and oxen, the best of the things which should have been utterly destroyed, to sacrifice to the LORD your God in Gilgal."

So Samuel said: "Has the LORD as great delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices, as in obeying the voice of the LORD? Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice, and to heed than the fat of rams. For rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft, and stubbornness is as iniquity and idolatry. Because you have rejected the word of the LORD, He also has rejected you from being king."

We should understand that God does cleanse sin from what is His and that may include the killing of the sinner. That does not violate the law, for it is directed destruction and is not murder. Murder has the implied intent to do harm. Therefore, there is a difference between someone killing in a time of war, or on the other side of the fence, killing someone to get revenge, the intent to do harm against another individual because you think you have been wronged and must make amends. Do I hear that God is a loving God and wouldn't do this? God may be a loving God, but even more so God is a righteous God. Out of righteousness one can find love. Out of deception, lead by Satan, one can find the change of thought to lead many astray from being righteous to being what they perceive to be right. Every one of us should take the time to read and study this one command to see if our personal thoughts are in accord with the intent of the Bible or if they are in accord with tradition that may lead us away from what the Bible actually teaches.

Commandment Seven: Exodus 20:14, *"You shall not commit adultery."* Deuteronomy 5:18, *"You shall not commit adultery."* We see Jesus speaking this commandment in the following, Matthew

5:27, *“You have heard that it was said to those of old, you shall not commit adultery.”* and in Matthew 19:18, *He said to Him, “Which ones?”*

Jesus said, “You shall not murder, you shall not commit adultery, you shall not steal, you shall not bear false witness.” Paul continued the teaching in the following verse. Romans 13:9, *For the commandments, “You shall not commit adultery, you shall not murder, you shall not steal, you shall not bear false witness, you shall not covet, and if there is any other commandment, are all summed up in this saying, namely, you shall love your neighbor as yourself.”*

Commandment Eight: Exodus 20:15, *“You shall not steal.”* Deuteronomy 5:19, *“You shall not steal.”* Jesus spoke these words in the following: Matthew 19:18, *He said to Him, “Which ones?”*

Jesus said, “You shall not murder, you shall not commit adultery, you shall not steal, you shall not bear false witness.” Paul spoke them in Romans 13:9, *For the commandments, “You shall not commit adultery, you shall not murder, you shall not steal, you shall not bear false witness, you shall not covet, and if there is any other commandment, are all summed up in this saying, namely, you shall love your neighbor as yourself.”*

Commandment Nine: Exodus 20:16, *“You shall not bear false witness against your neighbor.”* Deuteronomy 5:20, *“You shall not bear false witness against your neighbor.”* Jesus spoke this command in Matthew 19:18, *He said to Him, “Which ones?”*

Jesus said, “You shall not murder, you shall not commit adultery, you shall not steal, you shall not bear false witness.” Mark 10:19, *“You know the commandments: ‘Do not commit adultery, do not murder, do not steal, do not bear false witness, do not defraud, honor your father and your mother.’”* Luke 18:20, *“You know the commandments: ‘Do not commit adultery, do not murder, do not steal, do not bear false witness, honor your father and your mother.’”* Paul taught in Romans 13:9, *For the commandments, “You shall not commit adultery, you shall not murder, you shall not steal, you shall not bear false witness, you shall not covet, and if there is any other commandment, are all summed up in this saying, namely, you shall love your neighbor as yourself.”*

Commandment Ten: Exodus 20:17, *“You shall not covet your neighbor’s house; you shall not covet your neighbor’s wife, nor his male servant, nor his female servant, nor his ox, nor his donkey, nor anything that is your neighbor’s.”* Deuteronomy 5:21, *“You shall not covet your neighbor’s wife; and you shall not desire your neighbor’s house, his field, his male servant, his female servant, his ox, his donkey, or anything that is your neighbor’s.”* Jesus did not speak this command directly, and furthermore there are many who do not understand what this command means. We don’t use the word covet that often anymore, but if you associate the act of greed, plus personal desire (wanting something that isn’t yours, or being desirous), in this command you should have something on the order of: You shall not desire, want, wish for, lust after, or long for your neighbor’s house; you shall not desire, want, wish for, lust after, or long for your neighbor’s wife, nor his male servant, nor his female servant, nor his car, or his boat or anything that is your neighbor’s.

To see this in a Biblical verse look at the following: Deuteronomy 7:25, *“You shall burn the carved images of their gods with fire; you shall not covet the silver or gold that is on them, nor take it for yourselves, lest you be snared by it; for it is an abomination to the LORD your God.”* To see how Jesus applied this command look at the following. In this first verse we see the overall intent that covetousness, or desire may cause. Luke 12:15, *And He said to them, “Take heed and beware of covetousness, for one’s life does not consist in the abundance of the things he possesses.”* In the second verse we can see the desire of lust, even for your neighbor’s wife, illustrated by Jesus. Matthew 5:28, *“But I say to you that whoever looks at a woman to lust for her has already committed adultery with*

her in his heart.” Paul did speak more about this command in the following: Romans 7:7, What shall we say then? Is the law sin? Certainly not! On the contrary, I would not have known sin except through the law. For I would not have known covetousness unless the law had said, “You shall not covet.” Romans 13:9, For the commandments, “You shall not commit adultery, you shall not murder, you shall not steal, you shall not bear false witness, you shall not covet, and if there is any other commandment, are all summed up in this saying, namely, you shall love your neighbor as yourself.”

Blessings for Obedience

If one really wants to see the intent of the law and the righteousness of obedience to God it is easy to find in the following verses. Deuteronomy 28:1-14, *“Now it shall come to pass, if you diligently obey the voice of the LORD your God, to observe carefully all His commandments which I command you today, that the LORD your God will set you high above all nations of the earth. And all these blessings shall come upon you and overtake you, because you obey the voice of the LORD your God: Blessed shall you be in the city, and blessed shall you be in the country. Blessed shall be the fruit of your body, the produce of your ground and the increase of your herds, the increase of your cattle and the offspring of your flocks. Blessed shall be your basket and your kneading bowl. Blessed shall you be when you come in, and blessed shall you be when you go out. The LORD will cause your enemies who rise against you to be defeated before your face; they shall come out against you one way and flee before you seven ways. The LORD will command the blessing on you in your storehouses and in all to which you set your hand, and He will bless you in the land which the LORD your God is giving you. The LORD will establish you as a holy people to Himself, just as He has sworn to you, if you keep the commandments of the LORD your God and walk in His ways. Then all peoples of the earth shall see that you are called by the name of the LORD, and they shall be afraid of you. And the LORD will grant you plenty of goods, in the fruit of your body, in the increase of your livestock, and in the produce of your ground, in the land of which the LORD swore to your fathers to give you. The LORD will open to you His good treasure, the heavens, to give the rain to your land in its season, and to bless all the work of your hand. You shall lend to many nations, but you shall not borrow. And the LORD will make you the head and not the tail; you shall be above only, and not be beneath, if you heed the commandments of the LORD your God, which I command you today, and are careful to observe them. So you shall not turn aside from any of the words which I command you this day, to the right or the left, to go after other gods to serve them.”* Do I hear some say that this does not apply to them because they are not Jewish? Better go back and review how your line of descent ties you into the covenant God gave to Abraham.

Curses for Disobedience

Deuteronomy 28:15-29:1, *“But it shall come to pass, if you do not obey the voice of the LORD your God, to observe carefully all His commandments and His statutes which I command you today, that all these curses will come upon you and overtake you: Cursed shall you be in the city, and cursed shall you be in the country. Cursed shall be your basket and your kneading bowl. Cursed shall be the fruit of your body and the produce of your land, the increase of your cattle and the offspring of your flocks. Cursed shall you be when you come in, and cursed shall you be when you go out.*

The LORD will send on you cursing, confusion, and rebuke in all that you set your hand to do, until you are destroyed and until you perish quickly, because of the wickedness of your doings in which you have forsaken Me. The LORD will make the plague cling to you until He has consumed you from

the land which you are going to possess. The LORD will strike you with consumption, with fever, with inflammation, with severe burning fever, with the sword, with scorching, and with mildew; they shall pursue you until you perish. And your heavens which are over your head shall be bronze, and the earth which is under you shall be iron. The LORD will change the rain of your land to powder and dust; from the heaven it shall come down on you until you are destroyed.”

“The LORD will cause you to be defeated before your enemies; you shall go out one way against them and flee seven ways before them; and you shall become troublesome to all the kingdoms of the earth. Your carcasses shall be food for all the birds of the air and the beasts of the earth, and no one shall frighten them away. The LORD will strike you with the boils of Egypt, with tumors, with the scab, and with the itch, from which you cannot be healed. The LORD will strike you with madness and blindness and confusion of heart. And you shall grope at noonday, as a blind man gropes in darkness; you shall not prosper in your ways; you shall be only oppressed and plundered continually, and no one shall save you.”

“You shall betroth a wife, but another man shall lie with her; you shall build a house, but you shall not dwell in it; you shall plant a vineyard, but shall not gather its grapes. Your ox shall be slaughtered before your eyes, but you shall not eat of it; your donkey shall be violently taken away from before you, and shall not be restored to you; your sheep shall be given to your enemies, and you shall have no one to rescue them. Your sons and your daughters shall be given to another people, and your eyes shall look and fail with longing for them all day long; and there shall be no strength in your hand. A nation whom you have not known shall eat the fruit of your land and the produce of your labor, and you shall be only oppressed and crushed continually. So you shall be driven mad because of the sight which your eyes see. The LORD will strike you in the knees and on the legs with severe boils which cannot be healed, and from the sole of your foot to the top of your head.”

“The LORD will bring you and the king whom you set over you to a nation which neither you nor your fathers have known, and there you shall serve other gods; wood and stone. “And you shall become an astonishment, a proverb, and a byword among all nations where the LORD will drive you.”

“You shall carry much seed out to the field but gather little in, for the locust shall consume it. You shall plant vineyards and tend them, but you shall neither drink of the wine nor gather the grapes; for the worms shall eat them. You shall have olive trees throughout all your territory, but you shall not anoint yourself with the oil; for your olives shall drop off. You shall beget sons and daughters, but they shall not be yours; for they shall go into captivity. Locusts shall consume all your trees and the produce of your land.”

“The alien who is among you shall rise higher and higher above you, and you shall come down lower and lower. He shall lend to you, but you shall not lend to him; he shall be the head, and you shall be the tail.”

“Moreover all these curses shall come upon you and pursue and overtake you, until you are destroyed, because you did not obey the voice of the LORD your God, to keep His commandments and His statutes which He commanded you. And they shall be upon you for a sign and a wonder, and on your descendants forever.”

“Because you did not serve the LORD your God with joy and gladness of heart, for the abundance of everything, therefore you shall serve your enemies, whom the LORD will send against you, in hunger, in thirst, in nakedness, and in need of everything; and He will put a yoke of iron on your neck until He has destroyed you. The LORD will bring a nation against you from afar, from the end of the earth, as swift as the eagle flies, a nation whose language you will not understand, a nation of fierce countenance, which does not respect the elderly nor show favor to the young. And they shall eat the increase of your livestock and the produce of your land, until you are destroyed; they shall not leave you grain or new wine or oil, or the increase of your cattle or the offspring of your flocks, until they have destroyed you.”

“They shall besiege you at all your gates until your high and fortified walls, in which you trust, come down throughout all your land; and they shall besiege you at all your gates throughout all your land which the LORD your God has given you. You shall eat the fruit of your own body, the flesh of your sons and your daughters whom the LORD your God has given you, in the siege and desperate straits in which your enemy shall distress you. The sensitive and very refined man among you will be hostile toward his brother; toward the wife of his bosom, and toward the rest of his children whom he leaves behind, so that he will not give any of them the flesh of his children whom he will eat, because he has nothing left in the siege and desperate straits in which your enemy shall distress you at all your gates. The tender and delicate woman among you, who would not venture to set the sole of her foot on the ground because of her delicateness and sensitivity, will refuse to the husband of her bosom, and to her son and her daughter, her placenta which comes out from between her feet and her children whom she bears; for she will eat them secretly for lack of everything in the siege and desperate straits in which your enemy shall distress you at all your gates.”

“If you do not carefully observe all the words of this law that are written in this book, that you may fear this glorious and awesome name, THE LORD YOUR GOD, then the LORD will bring upon you and your descendants extraordinary plagues; great and prolonged plagues; and serious and prolonged sicknesses. Moreover He will bring back on you all the diseases of Egypt, of which you were afraid, and they shall cling to you. Also every sickness and every plague, which is not written in this Book of the Law, will the LORD bring upon you until you are destroyed. You shall be left few in number; whereas you were as the stars of heaven in multitude, because you would not obey the voice of the LORD your God. And it shall be, that just as the LORD rejoiced over you to do you good and multiply you, so the LORD will rejoice over you to destroy you and bring you to nothing; and you shall be plucked from off the land which you go to possess.”

“Then the LORD will scatter you among all peoples, from one end of the earth to the other, and there you shall serve other gods, which neither you nor your fathers have known; wood and stone. And among those nations you shall find no rest, nor shall the sole of your foot have a resting place; but there the LORD will give you a trembling heart, failing eyes, and anguish of soul. Your life shall hang in doubt before you; you shall fear day and night, and have no assurance of life. In the morning you shall say, ‘Oh, that it were evening!’ And at evening you shall say, ‘Oh, that it were morning!’ because of the fear which terrifies your heart, and because of the sight which your eyes see.”

“And the LORD will take you back to Egypt in ships, by the way of which I said to you, ‘You shall never see it again.’ And there you shall be offered for sale to your enemies as male and female slaves, but no one will buy you.”

These are the words of the covenant which the LORD commanded Moses to make with the children of Israel in the land of Moab, besides the covenant which He made with them in Horeb.

So there, you have a choice: abundant life or existence; freedom or slave; lender or borrower and it is all left up to each of us to make our own choice whether we will be obedient to God’s commands or not. Each of us will make a choice and each will see the results of that choice. What will yours be, abundant life through obedience, or existence through disobedience?

Still not assured of the promises? Okay, what does Jesus teach us. Find out in the next chapter.

The Greatest Teacher

My quest drove me on to find all the verses needed to write this chapter. Oh sure! I could easily sit down at the computer and do a word search on bread, or life, or living water or even light and come up with verses that could go here.

I could run a search on all the miracles or on all the healings and there would be pages of information to discuss.

But that wee small voice called to me and said KIS (Keep It Simple). God's way is not complex, it's simple. We, being mankind, are the cause of the complexity to the will of God. In all of my journeys, in all of my study and research there are a handful of Bible verses that state the truth beyond comparison. First and foremost, are the statements recorded about Jesus that were made by God:

Matthew 3:17 *And suddenly a voice came from heaven, saying, "This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased."*

Matthew 17:5, *While he was still speaking, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them; and suddenly a voice came out of the cloud, saying, "This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased. Hear Him!"*

Mark 1:11, *Then a voice came from heaven, "You are My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased."*

Luke 3:22, *And the Holy Spirit descended in bodily form like a dove upon Him, and a voice came from heaven which said, "You are My beloved Son; in You I am well pleased."*

You can study all the great religions upon the earth and this is the only case, about the only person, that you can find this statement being made. There are two other situations that need to be added to these verses. Outside of the disciples Jesus admitted that He was the Messiah to only two people: one was a man and the other was a woman. It's found in the story of the woman at the well in John 4:25-26, *The woman said to Him, "I know that Messiah is coming (who is called Christ). When He comes, He will tell us all things."*

Jesus said to her, "I who speak to you am He."

It's in the story of the blind man that was healed on the Sabbath in John 9:34-37, *They answered and said to him, "You were completely born in sins, and are you teaching us?" And they cast him out. Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when He had found him, He said to him, "Do you believe in the Son of God?"*

He answered and said, "Who is He, Lord, that I may believe in Him?"

And Jesus said to him, "You have both seen Him and it is He who is talking with you."

No other prophet, no other religious leader has ever been so bold as to admit they were the promised Messiah, the Son of God, and the Savior of the World. And no other has had it backed up by a voice from Heaven, but Jesus did!

Surely, I could go on and on and on to provide verses to you to show that the promises made about Jesus are real and that you can rest assured that they are all true. Instead I'll give you the only additional command that Jesus left with us to understand.

John 13:34, *"A new commandment I give to you, that you love one another; as I have loved you, that you also love one another."* Only one command, or as I've said on many occasions only one new rule by which to live our lives. Stop and think about what is said in this one rule. If every person would only live by this rule there would not be the problems that we all are now seeing.

Jesus the Christ

What makes Jesus the anointed one of God?

Every Christian should know the many answers to the above question. With very little thought you should be able to give at least five of the prophecies that indicate Jesus is the Messiah! Unfortunately, my own experience indicates that there are few who can defend their belief and explain even five of the prophecies that indicate Jesus is the Messiah. Should the question be: Why can't you, it's your belief?

The answers, that I'm aware of, are given here as a study aid to provide you a better understanding of who your LORD is and what was said about him long before he was born. These are the verses that fulfill those prophecies.

| Prophecies | Fulfillment |
|---|---|
| <p style="text-align: center;">Would be the Offspring of a woman</p> <p>Genesis 3:15 “And I will put enmity between you and the woman, <i>and between your seed and her Seed</i>; He shall bruise your head, and you shall bruise His heel.”</p> | <p>Luke 2:7 <i>And she brought forth her firstborn Son, and wrapped Him in swaddling cloths, and laid Him in a manger, because there was no room for them in the inn.</i></p> <p>Galatians 4:4 <i>But when the fullness of the time had come, God sent forth His Son, born of a woman, born under the law.</i></p> <p>Revelation 12:5 <i>She bore a male Child who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron. And her Child was caught up to God and His throne.</i></p> |
| <p style="text-align: center;">Promised Offspring of Abraham</p> <p>Genesis 12:3 “I will bless those who bless you, and I will curse him who curses you; and <i>in you all the families of the earth shall be blessed.</i>”</p> <p>Genesis 18:18 <i>Since Abraham shall surely become a great and mighty nation, and all the nations of the earth shall be blessed in him.</i></p> | <p>Matthew 1:1 <i>The book of the genealogy of Jesus Christ, the Son of David, the Son of Abraham.</i></p> <p>Luke 3:34 <i>The son of Jacob, the son of Isaac, the son of Abraham, the son of Terah, the son of Nahor.</i></p> <p>Acts 3:25 <i>You are sons of the prophets, and of the covenant which God made with our fathers, saying to Abraham, “And in your seed all the families of the earth shall be blessed.”</i></p> |
| <p style="text-align: center;">Promised Offspring of Isaac</p> <p>Genesis 17:19 <i>Then God said: “No, Sarah your wife shall bear you a son, and you shall call his name Isaac; I will establish My covenant with him for an everlasting covenant, and with his descendants after him.”</i></p> | <p>Matthew 1:2 <i>Abraham begot Isaac, Isaac begot Jacob, and Jacob begot Judah and his brothers.</i></p> <p>Luke 3:34 <i>The son of Jacob, the son of Isaac, the son of Abraham, the son of Terah, the son of Nahor.</i></p> |

| | |
|--|---|
| <p>Promised Offspring of Jacob Genesis 28:14 Also your descendants shall be as the dust of the earth; you shall spread abroad to the west and the east, to the north and the south; and <i>in you and in your seed all the families of the earth shall be blessed.</i> Numbers 24:17 “I see Him, but not now; I behold Him, but not near; <i>a Star shall come out of Jacob</i>; a Scepter shall rise out of Israel, and batter the brow of Moab, and destroy all the sons of tumult.</p> | <p>Matthew 1:2 Abraham begot Isaac, <i>Isaac begot Jacob</i>, and Jacob begot Judah and his brothers. Luke 3:34 <i>The son of Jacob</i>, the son of Isaac, the son of Abraham, the son of Terah, the son of Nahor.</p> |
| <p>Will descend from the tribe of Judah Genesis 49:10 <i>The scepter shall not depart from Judah</i>, nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh comes; and to Him shall be the obedience of the people.</p> | <p>Matthew 1:2 Abraham begot Isaac, Isaac begot Jacob, and <i>Jacob begot Judah and his brothers.</i> Luke 3:33 The son of Amminadab, the son of Ram, the son of Hezron, the son of Perez, <i>the son of Judah.</i></p> |
| <p>The Heir to the throne of David Isaiah 9:7 Of the increase of His government and peace there will be no end, <i>upon the throne of David</i> and over His kingdom, to order it and establish it with judgment and justice from that time forward, even forever. The zeal of the Lord of hosts will perform this.</p> | <p>Matthew 1:1 The book of the genealogy of Jesus Christ, the <i>Son of David</i>, the Son of Abraham. Matthew 1:6 And Jesse begot <i>David the king</i>. David the king begot Solomon by her who had been the wife of Uriah.</p> |
| <p>Will be born in Bethlehem Micah 5:2 “But you, Bethlehem Ephrathah, though you are little among the thousands of Judah, <i>yet out of you shall come forth to Me the One to be Ruler in Israel</i>, whose goings forth are from of old, from everlasting.”</p> | <p>Matthew 2:1 Now after Jesus was <i>born in Bethlehem of Judea</i> in the days of Herod the king, behold, wise men from the East came to Jerusalem. Luke 2:4-7 Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judea, <i>to the city of David, which is called Bethlehem</i>, because he was of the house and lineage of David, to be registered with Mary, his betrothed wife, who was with child. So it was, that while they were there, the days were completed for her to be delivered. And she brought forth her firstborn Son, and wrapped Him in swaddling cloths, and laid Him in a manger, because there was no room for them in the inn.</p> |
| <p>Would be born of a virgin Isaiah 7:14 Therefore the Lord Himself will give you a sign: behold, <i>the virgin shall conceive and bear a Son</i>, and shall call His name Immanuel.</p> | <p>Matthew 1:18 Now the birth of Jesus Christ was as follows: After His mother Mary was betrothed to Joseph, before they came together, <i>she was found with child of the Holy Spirit.</i> Luke 1:26-35 Now in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent by God to a city of Galilee named Nazareth, <i>to a virgin</i> betrothed to a man whose name</p> |

| | |
|---|--|
| | <p>was Joseph, of the house of David. The virgin's name was Mary. And having come in, the angel said to her, "Rejoice, highly favored one, the Lord is with you; blessed are you among women!" But when she saw him, she was troubled at his saying, and considered what manner of greeting this was. Then the angel said to her, "Do not be afraid, Mary, for you have found favor with God. And behold, you will conceive in your womb and bring forth a Son, and shall call His name Jesus. He will be great, and will be called the Son of the Highest; and the Lord God will give Him the throne of His father David. And He will reign over the house of Jacob forever, and of His kingdom there will be no end."</p> <p>Then Mary said to the angel, "How can this be, since I do not know a man?"</p> <p>And the angel answered and said to her, "The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Highest will overshadow you; therefore, also, that Holy One who is to be born will be called the Son of God."</p> |
| <p>There would be a slaughter of infants Jeremiah 31:15 Thus says the Lord: "A voice was heard in Ramah, lamentation and bitter weeping, Rachel weeping for her children, refusing to be comforted for her children, because they are no more."</p> | <p>Matthew 2:16-18 Then Herod, when he saw that he was deceived by the wise men, was exceedingly angry; and he sent forth and put to death all the male children who were in Bethlehem and in all its districts, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had determined from the wise men. Then was fulfilled what was spoken by Jeremiah the prophet, saying: "A voice was heard in Ramah, lamentation, weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping for her children, refusing to be comforted, because they are no more."</p> |
| <p>Jesus and his parents would escape into Egypt Hosea 11:1 "When Israel was a child, I loved him, and out of Egypt I called My son."</p> | <p>Matthew 2:14-15 When he arose, he took the young Child and His mother by night and departed for Egypt, and was there until the death of Herod, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Lord through the prophet, saying, "Out of Egypt I called My Son."</p> |
| <p>Would be called a Nazarene Cannot find any reference in the Old Testament to meet the statement made by the Prophets.</p> | <p>Matthew 2:23 and he went and lived in a town called Nazareth. So was fulfilled what was said through the prophets: "He will be called a Nazarene."</p> |

Jesus would have a ministry in Galilee

Isaiah 9:1-2 Nevertheless the gloom will not be upon her who is distressed, as when at first He lightly esteemed the land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali, and afterward more heavily oppressed her, by the way of the sea, beyond the Jordan, *in Galilee of the Gentiles*. The people who walked in darkness have seen a great light; those who dwelt in the land of the shadow of death, upon them a light has shined.

Matthew 4:12-16 Now when Jesus heard that John had been put in prison, He departed to Galilee. And leaving Nazareth, He came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is by the sea, in the regions of Zebulun and Naphtali, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah the prophet, saying: “The land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali, by the way of the sea, beyond the Jordan, *Galilee of the Gentiles*: The people who sat in darkness have seen a great light, and upon those who sat in the region and shadow of death Light has dawned.”

Jesus would be called a Prophet

Deuteronomy 18:15 "The Lord your God will raise up for you a *Prophet* like me from your midst, from your brethren. Him you shall hear.”

John 1:45 Philip found Nathanael and said to him, “We have found *Him of whom Moses in the law, and also the prophets*, wrote—Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph.”

John 6:14 Then those men, when they had seen the sign that Jesus did, said, “This is truly *the Prophet* who is to come into the world.”

Acts 3:19-26 Repent therefore and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, so that times of refreshing may come from the presence of the Lord, and that He may send Jesus Christ, who was preached to you before, whom heaven must receive until the times of restoration of all things, which God has spoken by the mouth of all His holy prophets since the world began. For Moses truly said to the fathers, “The Lord your God will raise up for you a *Prophet* like me from your brethren. Him you shall hear in all things, whatever He says to you. And it shall be that every soul who will not hear *that Prophet* shall be utterly destroyed from among the people.”

Yes, and all the prophets, from Samuel and those who follow, as many as have spoken, have also foretold these days. You are sons of the prophets, and of the covenant which God made with our fathers, saying to Abraham, “And in your seed all the families of the earth shall be blessed.” To you first, God, having raised up His Servant Jesus, sent Him to bless you, in turning away every one of you from your iniquities.

| | |
|---|---|
| <p style="text-align: center;">Jesus would be called a Priest in the order of Melchizedek</p> <p>Psalms 110:4 The Lord has sworn and will not relent, “<i>You are a priest forever according to the order of Melchizedek.</i>”</p> | <p>Hebrews 5:5-6 So also Christ did not glorify Himself to become High Priest, but it was He who said to Him: “You are My Son, today I have begotten You.” As He also says in another place: “<i>You are a priest forever according to the order of Melchizedek.</i>”</p> <p>Hebrews 6:20 Where the forerunner has entered for us, even Jesus, having become <i>High Priest forever according to the order of Melchizedek.</i></p> <p>Hebrews 7:15-17 And it is yet far more evident if, in the likeness of Melchizedek, there arises another priest who has come, not according to the law of a fleshly commandment, but according to the power of an endless life. For He testifies: “<i>You are a priest forever according to the order of Melchizedek.</i>”</p> |
| <p style="text-align: center;">Would be rejected by the Jews</p> <p>Psalms 2:2 The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the Lord and <i>against His Anointed.</i></p> <p>Isaiah 53:3 He is despised and <i>rejected by men</i>, a Man of sorrows and acquainted with grief. And we hid, as it were, our faces from Him; He was despised, and we did not esteem Him.</p> | <p>Luke 17:25 But first He must suffer many things and <i>be rejected by this generation.</i></p> <p>Luke 23:18 And they all cried out at once, saying, “<i>Away with this Man, and release to us Barabbas.</i>”</p> <p>John 1:11 He came to His own, and <i>His own did not receive Him.</i></p> <p>John 5:43 I have come in My Father’s name, and <i>you do not receive Me</i>; if another comes in his own name, him you will receive.</p> |
| <p style="text-align: center;">Would have a high moral character</p> <p>Psalms 45:7 <i>You love righteousness and hate wickedness</i>; therefore God, Your God, has anointed You with the oil of gladness more than Your companions.</p> <p>Isaiah 11:2-4 <i>The Spirit of the Lord shall rest upon Him</i>, the Spirit of wisdom and understanding, the Spirit of counsel and might, the Spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the Lord. His delight is in the fear of the Lord, and He shall not judge by the sight of His eyes, nor decide by the hearing of His ears; but with righteousness <i>He shall judge the poor, and decide with equity for the meek of the earth</i>; He shall strike the earth with the rod of His mouth, and with the breath of His lips He shall slay the wicked.</p> | <p>Luke 2:52 And <i>Jesus increased in wisdom and stature</i>, and in favor with God and men.</p> <p>Luke 4:18 “<i>The Spirit of the Lord is upon Me</i>, because He has anointed Me to preach the gospel to the poor; He has sent Me to heal the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives and recovery of sight to the blind, to set at liberty those who are oppressed.”</p> |

He would enter Jerusalem riding on a donkey

Zechariah 9:9 "Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion! Shout, O daughter of Jerusalem! Behold, your King is coming to you; He is just and having salvation, lowly and *riding on a donkey*, a colt, the foal of a donkey.

Matthew 21:1-11 Now when they drew near Jerusalem, and came to Bethphage, at the Mount of Olives, then Jesus sent two disciples, saying to them, "Go into the village opposite you, and immediately you will find a donkey tied, and a colt with her. Loose them and bring them to Me. And if anyone says anything to you, you shall say, 'The Lord has need of them,' and immediately he will send them."

All this was done that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying: "Tell the daughter of Zion, 'behold, your King is coming to you, lowly, and sitting on a donkey, a colt, the foal of a donkey.'"

So the disciples went and did as Jesus commanded them. They brought the donkey and the colt, laid their clothes on them, and set Him on them. And a very great multitude spread their clothes on the road; others cut down branches from the trees and spread them on the road. Then the multitudes who went before and those who followed cried out, saying: "Hosanna to the Son of David! Blessed is He who comes in the name of the Lord! Hosanna in the highest!"

And when He had come into Jerusalem, all the city was moved, saying, "Who is this?"

So the multitudes said, "This is Jesus, the prophet from Nazareth of Galilee."

John 12:13-14 Took branches of palm trees and went out to meet Him, and cried out: "Hosanna! Blessed is He who comes in the name of the Lord! The King of Israel!" Then Jesus, when He had found a young donkey, sat on it; as it is written.

Would be betrayed by a friend

Psalms 41:9 *Even my own familiar friend in whom I trusted, who ate my bread, has lifted up his heel against me.*

Matthew 26:14-16 Then *one of the twelve*, called Judas Iscariot, went to the chief priests and said, "What are you willing to give me if I deliver Him to you?" And they counted out to him thirty pieces of silver. So from that time he sought opportunity to betray Him.

Mark 14:10 Then Judas Iscariot, *one of the twelve*, went to the chief priests to betray Him to them.

Mark 14:43-45 And immediately, while He was still speaking, Judas, *one of the twelve*, with a great multitude with swords and clubs, came from the chief priests and the scribes and the elders. Now

| | |
|--|--|
| | <p>His betrayer had given them a signal, saying, “Whomever I kiss, He is the One; seize Him and lead Him away safely.”</p> |
| <p>Betrayed by thirty pieces of silver Zechariah 11:12 Then I said to them, “If it is agreeable to you, give me my wages; and if not, refrain.” So <i>they weighed out for my wages thirty pieces of silver.</i></p> | <p>Matthew 26:15 And said, “What are you willing to give me if I deliver Him to you?” And <i>they counted out to him thirty pieces of silver.</i></p> |
| <p>Betrayal money to be returned for a potter’s field Zechariah 11:13 And the Lord said to me, “Throw it to the potter”—that princely price they set on me. <i>So I took the thirty pieces of silver and threw them into the house of the Lord for the potter.</i></p> | <p>Matthew 27:3-10 Then Judas, His betrayer, seeing that He had been condemned, was remorseful and brought back the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders, saying, “I have sinned by betraying innocent blood.”</p> <p>And they said, “What is that to us? You see to it!” Then he threw down the pieces of silver in the temple and departed, and went and hanged himself.</p> <p>But the chief priests took the silver pieces and said, “It is not lawful to put them into the treasury, because they are the price of blood.” And they consulted together and bought with them the potter's field, to bury strangers in. Therefore that field has been called the Field of Blood to this day.</p> <p>Then was fulfilled what was spoken by Jeremiah the prophet, saying, “And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the value of Him who was priced, whom they of the children of Israel priced, and gave them for the potter’s field, as the Lord directed me.”</p> |
| <p>Judas’ position to be taken by another Psalms 109:7-8 When he is judged, let him be found guilty, and let his prayer become sin. Let his days be few, and let another <i>take his office.</i></p> | <p>Acts 1:18-20 Now this man purchased a field with the wages of iniquity; and falling headlong, he burst open in the middle and all his entrails gushed out. And it became known to all those dwelling in Jerusalem; so that field is called in their own language, Akel Dama, that is, Field of Blood. “For it is written in the book of Psalms:</p> <p>‘Let his dwelling place be desolate, and let no one live in it;’ and, ‘Let another <i>take his office.</i>’”</p> |

| | |
|---|--|
| | <p>Acts 1:24-26 And they prayed and said, “You, O Lord, who know the hearts of all, show which of these two You have chosen to take part in this ministry and apostleship from which Judas by transgression fell, that he might go to his own place.” And they cast their lots, and the lot fell on <i>Matthias</i>. <i>And he was numbered with the eleven apostles.</i></p> |
| <p>False witnesses accuse him Psalms 27:12 Do not deliver me to the will of my adversaries; for <i>false witnesses have risen against me</i>, and such as breathe out violence. Psalms 35:11 KJV <i>False witnesses did rise up</i>; they laid to my charge things that I knew not.</p> | <p>Matthew 26:60-61 But found none. Even though many <i>false witnesses</i> came forward, they found none. But at last two false witnesses came forward and said, “This fellow said, ‘I am able to destroy the temple of God and to build it in three days.’”</p> |
| <p>Would be silent when accused Psalms 38:13-14 But I, like a deaf man, do not hear; and I am like a mute <i>who does not open his mouth</i>. Thus I am like a man who does not hear, and in whose mouth is no response. Isaiah 53:7 He was oppressed and He was afflicted, yet <i>He opened not His mouth</i>; He was led as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before its shearers is silent, so <i>He opened not His mouth</i>.</p> | <p>Matthew 26:62-63 And the high priest arose and said to Him, “Do You answer nothing? What is it these men testify against You?” But <i>Jesus kept silent</i>. And the high priest answered and said to Him, “I put You under oath by the living God: Tell us if You are the Christ, the Son of God!” Matthew 27:12-14 And while He was being accused by the chief priests and elders, <i>He answered nothing</i>. Then Pilate said to Him, “Do You not hear how many things they testify against You?” But <i>He answered him not one word</i>, so that the governor marveled greatly.</p> |
| <p>Would be struck and spit on Isaiah 50:6 <i>I gave My back to those who struck Me, and My cheeks to those who plucked out the beard</i>; I did not hide My face from shame and spitting.</p> | <p>Mark 14:65 Then <i>some began to spit on Him</i>, and to blindfold Him, and to beat Him, and to say to Him, “Prophecy!” And the officers <i>struck Him with the palms of their hands</i>. John 18:22 And when He had said these things, one of the officers who stood by <i>struck Jesus with the palm of his hand</i>, saying, “Do You answer the high priest like that?” John 19:1-3 So then Pilate took Jesus and scourged Him. And the soldiers twisted a crown of thorns and put it on His head, and they put on Him a purple robe. Then they said, “Hail, King of the Jews!” And <i>they struck Him with their hands</i>.</p> |

| | |
|--|---|
| <p style="text-align: center;">Would be hated without cause</p> <p>Psalms 69:4 Those who <i>hate me without a cause</i> are more than the hairs of my head; they are mighty who would destroy me, being my enemies wrongfully; though I have stolen nothing, I still must restore it.</p> <p>Psalms 109:3-5 <i>They have also surrounded me with words of hatred</i>, and fought against me without a cause. In return for my love they are my accusers, but I give myself to prayer. Thus they have rewarded me evil for good, and hatred for my love.</p> | <p>John 15:23-25 He who hates Me hates My Father also. If I had not done among them the works which no one else did, they would have no sin; but now they have seen and also hated both Me and My Father. But this happened that the word might be fulfilled which is written in their law, "<i>They hated Me without a cause.</i>"</p> |
| <p style="text-align: center;">Would suffer vicariously</p> <p>Isaiah 53:4-6 Surely He has borne our griefs and carried our sorrows; yet we esteemed Him stricken, smitten by God, and afflicted. But <i>He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities</i>; the chastisement for our peace was upon Him, and <i>by His stripes we are healed</i>. All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned, every one, to his own way; and <i>the Lord has laid on Him the iniquity of us all</i>.</p> | <p>Matthew 8:16-17 When evening had come, they brought to Him many who were demon-possessed. And He cast out the spirits with a word, and healed all who were sick, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah the prophet, saying: "<i>He Himself took our infirmities and bore our sicknesses.</i>"</p> <p>Romans 4:25 <i>Who was delivered up because of our offenses</i>, and was raised because of our justification.</p> <p>1 Corinthians 15:3 For I delivered to you first of all that which I also received: that <i>Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures</i>.</p> |
| <p style="text-align: center;">Would be crucified with sinners</p> <p>Isaiah 53:12 Therefore I will divide Him a portion with the great, and He shall divide the spoil with the strong, because He poured out His soul unto death, and <i>He was numbered with the transgressors</i>; and He bore the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors.</p> | <p>Matthew 27:38 <i>Two robbers were crucified with him</i>, one on his right and one on his left.</p> <p>Mark 15:27-28 <i>With Him they also crucified two robbers</i>, one on His right and the other on His left. So the Scripture was fulfilled which says, "<i>And He was numbered with the transgressors.</i>"</p> <p>Luke 23:33 And when they had come to the place called Calvary, there <i>they crucified Him, and the criminals, one on the right hand and the other on the left</i>.</p> |
| <p style="text-align: center;">Hands and feet to be pierced</p> <p>Psalms 22:16 For dogs have surrounded Me; the congregation of the wicked has enclosed Me. They pierced My hands and My feet.</p> <p>Zechariah 12:10 "And I will pour on the house of David and on the inhabitants of Jerusalem the Spirit of grace and supplication; then <i>they will look on Me whom they pierced</i>. Yes, they will mourn for Him as one mourns for his only son, and grieve for Him as one grieves for a firstborn.</p> | <p>John 19:37 And again another Scripture says, "They shall look on <i>Him whom they pierced.</i>"</p> <p>John 20:27 Then He said to Thomas, "Reach your finger here, and look at My hands; and reach your hand here, and put it into My side. Do not be unbelieving, but believing."</p> |

| | |
|---|---|
| <p style="text-align: center;">To be mocked and insulted</p> <p>Psalms 22:6-8 But I am a worm, and no man; a reproach of men, and despised by the people. All those who see Me ridicule Me; they shoot out the lip, they shake the head, saying, “<i>He trusted in the Lord, let Him rescue Him; let Him deliver Him, since He delights in Him!</i>”</p> | <p>Matthew 27:39-44 And <i>those who passed by blasphemed Him</i>, wagging their heads and saying, “You who destroy the temple and build it in three days, save Yourself! If You are the Son of God, come down from the cross.”</p> <p>Likewise the chief priests also, <i>mocking</i> with the scribes and elders, said, “He saved others; Himself He cannot save. If He is the King of Israel, let Him now come down from the cross, and we will believe Him. He trusted in God; let Him deliver Him now if He will have Him; for He said, ‘I am the Son of God.’” Even <i>the robbers who were crucified with Him reviled Him with the same thing.</i></p> <p>Mark 15:29-32 And <i>those who passed by blasphemed Him</i>, wagging their heads and saying, “Aha! You who destroy the temple and build it in three days, save Yourself, and come down from the cross!”</p> <p>Likewise the chief priests also, <i>mocking among themselves with the scribes</i>, said, “He saved others; Himself He cannot save. Let the Christ, the King of Israel, descend now from the cross, that we may see and believe.” Even <i>those who were crucified with Him reviled Him.</i></p> |
| <p style="text-align: center;">Would be given gall and vinegar</p> <p>Psalms 69:21 <i>They also gave me gall for my food, and for my thirst they gave me vinegar to drink.</i></p> | <p>Matthew 27:34 They gave Him <i>sour wine mingled with gall</i> to drink. But when He had tasted it, He would not drink.</p> <p>Matthew 27:48 Immediately one of them ran and took a sponge, filled it with <i>sour wine</i> and put it on a reed, and offered it to Him to drink.</p> <p>John 19:29 Now a vessel full of <i>sour wine</i> was sitting there; and they filled a sponge with sour wine, put it on hyssop, and put it to His mouth.</p> |
| <p style="text-align: center;">Would hear prophetic words repeated in mockery</p> <p>Psalms 22:8 “<i>He trusted in the Lord, let Him rescue Him; let Him deliver Him, since He delights in Him!</i>”</p> | <p>Matthew 27:43 “<i>He trusted in God; let Him deliver Him now if He will have Him</i>; for He said, ‘I am the Son of God.’”</p> |

| | |
|--|--|
| <p>Would pray for his enemies Psalms 109:4 In return for my love they are my accusers, but <i>I give myself to prayer.</i> Isaiah 53:12 Therefore I will divide Him a portion with the great, and He shall divide the spoil with the strong, because <i>He poured out His soul unto death</i>, and He was numbered with the transgressors, and He bore the sin of many, and <i>made intercession for the transgressors.</i></p> | <p>Luke 23:34 Then Jesus said, “<i>Father, forgive them, for they do not know what they do.</i>” And they divided His garments and cast lots.</p> |
| <p>His side would be pierced Zechariah 12:10 “And I will pour on the house of David and on the inhabitants of Jerusalem the Spirit of grace and supplication; then they will <i>look on Me whom they pierced.</i> Yes, they will mourn for Him as one mourns for his only son, and grieve for Him as one grieves for a firstborn.”</p> | <p>John 19:34 But one of the soldiers <i>pierced His side</i> with a spear, and immediately blood and water came out.</p> |
| <p>Soldiers would cast lots for his clothes Psalms 22:18 <i>They divide My garments among them, and for My clothing they cast lots.</i></p> | <p>Mark 15:24 And they crucified Him. <i>Dividing up His clothes, they cast lots</i> to see what each would get. John 19:24 They said therefore among themselves, “Let us not tear it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be,” that the Scripture might be fulfilled which says: “<i>They divided My garments among them, and for My clothing they cast lots.</i>” Therefore the soldiers did these things. Luke 23:34 Then Jesus said, “Father, forgive them, for they do not know what they do.” And <i>they divided His garments and cast lots.</i></p> |
| <p>Not a bone would be broken Psalms 34:20 <i>He guards all his bones; not one of them is broken.</i></p> | <p>John 19:33 But when they came to Jesus and saw that He was already dead, <i>they did not break His legs.</i></p> |
| <p>Would be buried with the rich Isaiah 53:9 And they made His grave with the wicked—but <i>with the rich at His death</i>, because He had done no violence, nor was any deceit in His mouth.</p> | <p>Matthew 27:57-60 Now when evening had come, there came <i>a rich man</i> from Arimathea, named Joseph, who himself had also become a disciple of Jesus. This man went to Pilate and asked for the body of Jesus. Then Pilate commanded the body to be given to him. When Joseph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth, and <i>laid it in his new tomb</i> which he had hewn out of the rock; and he rolled a large stone against the door of the tomb, and departed.</p> |

Would arise

Psalms 16:10 *For You will not leave my soul in Sheol, nor will You allow Your Holy One to see corruption.*

Matthew 28:9 And as they went to tell His disciples, behold, *Jesus met them*, saying, “Rejoice!” So they came and held Him by the feet and worshiped Him.

Luke 24:36-46 Now as they said these things, *Jesus Himself stood in the midst of them*, and said to them, “Peace to you.” But they were terrified and frightened, and supposed they had seen a spirit.

And He said to them, “Why are you troubled? And why do doubts arise in your hearts? Behold My hands and My feet, that it is I Myself. Handle Me and see, for a spirit does not have flesh and bones as you see I have.” When He had said this, He showed them His hands and His feet. But while they still did not believe for joy, and marveled, He said to them, “Have you any food here?” So they gave Him a piece of a broiled fish and some honeycomb. And He took it and ate in their presence. Then He said to them, “These are the words which I spoke to you while I was still with you, that all things must be fulfilled which were written in the Law of Moses and the Prophets and the Psalms concerning Me.” And He opened their understanding, that they might comprehend the Scriptures. Then He said to them, “Thus it is written, and thus it was necessary for the Christ to suffer and to rise from the dead the third day.”

Would ascend into Heaven

Psalms 68:18 *You have ascended on high, you have led captivity captive; you have received gifts among men, even from the rebellious, that the Lord God might dwell there.*

Luke 24:50-51 And He led them out as far as Bethany, and He lifted up His hands and blessed them. Now it came to pass, while He blessed them, that *He was parted from them and carried up into heaven.*

Acts 1:9 Now when He had spoken these things, while they watched, *He was taken up, and a cloud received Him out of their sight.*

| | |
|--|---|
| <p>His rejection would be shown to the Jews Psalms 118:22 <i>The stone which the builders rejected has become the chief cornerstone.</i></p> | <p>Acts 4:10-11 “Let it be known to you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom you crucified, whom God raised from the dead, by Him this man stands here before you whole. This is the ‘stone which was rejected by you builders, which has become the chief cornerstone.’”</p> |
| <p>Rebellion against God and the Word Psalms 2:1-12 Why do the nations rage, and the people plot a vain thing? The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, <i>against the Lord and against His Anointed</i>, saying, “Let us break Their bonds in pieces and cast away their cords from us.” He who sits in the heavens shall laugh; the Lord shall hold them in derision.</p> <p>Then He shall speak to them in His wrath, and distress them in His deep displeasure: “Yet I have set My King on My holy hill of Zion. I will declare the decree: The Lord has said to Me, ‘You are My Son, today I have begotten You. Ask of Me, and I will give You the nations for Your inheritance, and the ends of the earth for Your possession. You shall break them with a rod of iron; You shall dash them to pieces like a potter’s vessel.’”</p> <p>Now therefore, be wise, O kings; be instructed, you judges of the earth. Serve the Lord with fear, and rejoice with trembling. Kiss the Son, lest He be angry, and you perish in the way, when His wrath is kindled but a little. Blessed are all those who put their trust in Him.</p> | <p>John 1:1-5 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was in the beginning with God. All things were made through Him, and without Him nothing was made that was made. In Him was life, and the life was the light of men. And <i>the light shines in the darkness, and the darkness did not comprehend it.</i></p> <p>Acts 4:25-29 Who by the mouth of Your servant David have said: “Why did the nations rage, and the people plot vain things? The kings of the earth took their stand, and the rulers were gathered together <i>against the Lord and against His Christ.</i>”</p> <p>For truly against Your holy Servant Jesus, whom You anointed, both Herod and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles and the people of Israel, were gathered together to do whatever Your hand and Your purpose determined before to be done. Now, Lord, look on their threats, and grant to Your servants that with all boldness they may speak Your word.</p> |

Lies, Hype and Deception!

Lies, hype and deceptions are Satan's geek-speak. We can call this many different things. It may be political correctness, or gender neutral, or smart marketing, or our traditions, or any number of other titles but when seriously analyzed it all comes down to simple deceptions, or the telling of lies.

We can find it on the television, in the movies, and even at those places we go to worship that we call church. Let's recall something from American History. Didn't Abraham Lincoln say, "You can please some of the people some of the time, and all the people some of the time; but you cannot please all the people all the time." Wouldn't it make sense that this applies across the board and in politics as well as anything else? Then wouldn't it also make sense that no matter how many polls are taken not everyone is going to be pleased with what is going on? So why then is it necessary to exaggerate the positive statements, or positions, to the point that they become lies?

We can see this in almost any advertisement on the television. We can see this in the actions of insurance companies who pay hospitals and doctors. We can see this when there are Congressional hearings over something that's gone bad. We can even see this in those churches that hide the truth, mask the manner of teaching, and call it their traditions.

Let's go back to the Bible to review and understand several things just for the sake of illustration. When we speak about Joshua (Jesus) and the Apostles, from what book did they teach? We know that Jesus could read because it is recorded as being so. Look at the following selection of verses and we will study several things.

Luke 4:13-32, Now when the devil had ended every temptation, he departed from Him until an opportune time. Then Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit to Galilee, and news of Him went out through all the surrounding region. And He taught in their synagogues, being glorified by all.

So He came to Nazareth, where He had been brought up. And as His custom was, He went into the synagogue on the Sabbath day, and stood up to read. And He was handed the book of the prophet Isaiah. And when He had opened the book, He found the place where it was written:

"The Spirit of the LORD is upon Me, because He has anointed Me to preach the gospel to the poor; He has sent Me to heal the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives and recovery of sight to the blind, to set at liberty those who are oppressed; to proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD." Then He closed the book, and gave it back to the attendant and sat down. And the eyes of all who were in the synagogue were fixed on Him. And He began to say to them, "Today this Scripture is fulfilled in your hearing."

So all bore witness to Him, and marveled at the gracious words which proceeded out of His mouth. And they said, "Is this not Joseph's son?"

He said to them, "You will surely say this proverb to Me, 'Physician, heal yourself! Whatever we have heard done in Capernaum, do also here in Your country.'" Then He said, "Assuredly, I say to you, no prophet is accepted in his own country. But I tell you truly, many widows were in Israel in the days of Elijah, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, and there was a great famine throughout all the land; but to none of them was Elijah sent except to Zarephath, in the region of Sidon, to a woman who was a widow. And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Elisha the prophet, and none of them was cleansed except Naaman the Syrian."

So all those in the synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath, and rose up and thrust Him out of the city; and they led Him to the brow of the hill on which their city was built, that they might throw Him down over the cliff.

Then passing through the midst of them, He went His way. Then He went down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee, and was teaching them on the Sabbaths. And they were astonished at His teaching, for

His word was with authority.

To start this portion of our study look at verse 13 in the above reference from Luke. Now you should see that Satan was involved with the life of Jesus. Luke records the happenings after Jesus was tempted in the desert. Satan was most certainly involved in the life of Jesus because he (Satan) did not want anything to change on the earth. Satan had been thrown out of heaven and he became the prince of the air. The earth was his domain and he didn't want any changes to be made. God, on the other hand, sent His Son to remedy the relationship between God and mankind. Jesus' mission was to heal the breach and place mankind back into a proper obedient relationship with God.

Luke wrote that Satan left Christ until *an opportune time*. Satan thought that opportune time was when Christ was on the stake (cross) and died. When Jesus arose on the third day Satan's power of death was broken. After Christ rose into heaven Satan thought he could break the influence of Christ by persecuting the followers of The Way, who became known as Christians. When that didn't work Christianity continued to grow and Satan went to his old bag of tricks and started misleading the thoughts of men from the truth and deceived them into accepting the lies he was telling.

Let's get back to these verses. Notice the full power of Christ in verses 14 and 30. In verse 14 we see Christ going from Jerusalem to Galilee in the blink of an eye. If you do not believe this to be so, please explain to me what it means when it says, *in the power of the Spirit*. The other verse to show the power of Christ is in verse 30. To fully understand verse 30 let's add verse 29 and read them together, *And rose up and thrust Him out of the city; and they led Him to the brow of the hill on which their city was built, that they might throw Him down over the cliff. Then passing through the midst of them, He went His way*. Christ permitted these people to lead Him from the city (verse 29); however, it clearly shows in verse 30 that He was not finished with His mission and was not harmed by these people. In fact it says that He *passed through the midst of them, He went His way.*"

Have you seen this illustrated someplace else and never even thought about where it came from? Well, have you watched any of the *Star Wars* movies? You mean you watched *Phantom Menace* and saw the Jedi knights move their finger and pass around Empire Storm-troopers or how they did other things of the force and never saw the tie to the teaching of good and evil in the movie? Honest, if you watch closely there are many ways that God sends ideas to people to continually tell the story of good and evil. God may inspire people to show good and evil in a book, a magazine article, on television, in a movie or on the Internet. What you must understand is that Satan can influence mankind to do the same, but for evil purposes. It becomes a decision for you on if you will find the good or if you will find the bad is all things; and yes, they will both be there. In *Star Wars* it was the Empire that is spreading evil, and the influence of the force that can be either good or bad. Look at the Internet. It can be a blessing of knowledge that expands your understanding by a vast margin. At the same time the Internet has a dark side that can lead you to destruction. It is there, it is not hard to find, the question is what will you do with it when you find it? Your decisions? Choose wisely!

Now, returning to our study in this chapter, the point that shows that Christ could read is in verse 16. Here's the question! From what book did Christ and the Apostles read? What advantage did the Apostles have that we seem to have forgotten? First, let's understand that Jesus and the Apostles did not read from the Bible! Second, let's understand that there wasn't a New Testament, no letters from Paul, no Revelation of Jesus as given to John. The only books that Jesus and the Apostles had were what we would call the Old Testament. Look at our reference verses. What does verse 17 say? Doesn't it say, *And He was handed the book of the prophet Isaiah. And when He had opened the book, He found the place where it was written.*

The advantage the Apostles had that we seem to have forgotten is the teachings of the prophets in the Old Testament and the Apostles knew the prophecies pertaining to Messiah. It has been said that there are 459 prophecies pertaining to Messiah in the Old Testament. Seriously, I cannot begin to

define all of these verses and show you the corresponding fulfillment in the Gospels. The point to be made is that today most people do not understand the Old Testament, as we should, to discern why Christ was Messiah. We also do not understand the simple truth that God laid out for mankind from which we have strayed. God set out certain feasts to be celebrated each and every year, just as He set a Sabbath day for mankind to rest from work. Answer this! Where is it written in the Bible that mankind will worship God on Sunday? Wasn't the original Sabbath on Saturday? Who changed it? Why? Why don't we celebrate the feasts that God established? Please do not give me the cop-out answer that we are not Jewish. We are to follow the feast that God the Father established for mankind if we follow the ways of Christ. Let me be blunt! There are three events whereby man is to appear before God each year! This command is not given once or even twice but a total of three times:

Exodus 23:17, *Three times in the year all your males shall appear before the Lord God.*

Exodus 34:23-24, *Three times in the year all your men shall appear before the Lord, the Lord God of Israel. For I will cast out the nations before you and enlarge your borders; neither will any man covet your land when you go up to appear before the Lord your God three times in the year.*

Deuteronomy 16:16-17, *Three times a year all your males shall appear before the Lord your God in the place which He (God) chooses: **at the Feast of Unleavened Bread, at the Feast of Weeks, and at the Feast of Tabernacles**; and they shall not appear before the Lord empty-handed. Every man shall give as he is able, according to the blessing of the Lord your God which He has given you.*

We do not have to be Jewish to do this. Look at what God said when He gave these special days to Moses.

SABBATH

Let's begin with the Sabbath: Leviticus 23:3, *“Six days shall work be done, but the seventh day is a Sabbath of solemn rest, a holy convocation. You shall do no work on it; it is the Sabbath of the LORD in all your dwellings.”* We must also understand what Jesus said concerning the Sabbath in the following verses:

Matthew 12:8, *“For the Son of Man is Lord even of the Sabbath.”*

Mark 2:28, *“Therefore the Son of Man is also Lord of the Sabbath.”*

Luke 6:5, *And He said to them, “The Son of Man is also Lord of the Sabbath.”*

We see, once again, that not by one, nor two, but by three witnesses we are told that Jesus is Lord of the Sabbath. There is no verse that instructs us to worship God on the first day of the week (Sunday). Remember what Jesus said specifically pertaining to the Sabbath in Mark 2:27, *And He said to them, “The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath.”*

FEAST DAYS

Now the feast days that carry special statements:

Passover and the Feast of Unleavened Bread: Leviticus 23:5-8, *“On the fourteenth day of the first month (14th of April) at twilight is the Lord's Passover. And on the fifteenth day of the same month is the Feast of Unleavened Bread to the Lord; seven days you must eat unleavened bread. On the first day (15th) you shall have a holy convocation; you shall do no customary work on it. But you shall offer an offering made by fire to the Lord for seven days. The seventh day (21st) shall be a holy convocation; you shall do no customary work on it.”*

Feast of Weeks: Leviticus 23:16-21, *Count fifty days to the day after the seventh Sabbath (June 6th); then you shall offer a new grain offering to the Lord. You shall bring from your dwellings two wave loaves of two-tenths of an ephah. They shall be of fine flour; they shall be baked with leaven. They are the firstfruits to the Lord. And you shall offer with the bread seven lambs of the first year, without blemish, one young bull, and two rams. They shall be as a burnt offering to the Lord, with their grain offering and their drink offerings, an offering made by fire for a sweet aroma to the Lord. Then you shall sacrifice one kid of the goats as a sin offering, and two male lambs of the first year as a sacrifice of a peace offering. The priest shall wave them with the bread of the firstfruits as a wave offering before the Lord, with the two lambs. They shall be holy to the Lord for the priest. And you shall proclaim on the same day that it is a holy convocation to you. You shall do no customary work on it. It shall be a statute forever in all your dwellings throughout your generations.*

Feast of Trumpets: Leviticus 23:23-25, *Then the Lord spoke to Moses, saying, "Speak to the children of Israel, saying: 'In the seventh month, on the first day of the month (October 1st), you shall have a sabbath-rest, a memorial of blowing of trumpets, a holy convocation. You shall do no customary work on it; and you shall offer an offering made by fire to the Lord.' "*

Day of Atonement: Leviticus 23:26-32, *And the Lord spoke to Moses, saying: "Also the tenth day of this seventh month (October 10th) shall be the Day of Atonement. It shall be a holy convocation for you; you shall afflict your souls, and offer an offering made by fire to the Lord. And you shall do no work on that same day, for it is the Day of Atonement, to make atonement for you before the Lord your God. For any person who is not afflicted in soul on that same day shall be cut off from his people. And any person who does any work on that same day, that person I will destroy from among his people. You shall do no manner of work; it shall be a statute forever throughout your generations in all your dwellings. It shall be to you a sabbath of solemn rest, and you shall afflict your souls; on the ninth day of the month at evening, from evening to evening, you shall celebrate your sabbath."*

Feast of Tabernacles: Leviticus 23:33-36, *Then the Lord spoke to Moses, saying, "Speak to the children of Israel, saying: 'The fifteenth day of this seventh month (October 15th) shall be the Feast of Tabernacles for seven days to the Lord. On the first day (15th) there shall be a holy convocation. You shall do no customary work on it. For seven days you shall offer an offering made by fire to the Lord. On the eighth day (22nd) you shall have a holy convocation, and you shall offer an offering made by fire to the Lord. It is a sacred assembly, and you shall do no customary work on it.'*

For all the appointed feasts: Leviticus 23:37-38, *"These are the feasts of the LORD which you shall proclaim to be holy convocations, to offer an offering made by fire to the LORD, a burnt offering and a grain offering, a sacrifice and drink offerings, everything on its day; besides the Sabbaths of the LORD, besides your gifts, besides all your vows, and besides all your freewill offerings which you give to the LORD."*

How did we get so far from the truth? If these are the Holy days that God the Father set up why is it we no longer celebrate them before God? Remember what Jesus said in Matthew 5:17-20, *"Do not think that I have come to abolish the Law or the Prophets; I have not come to abolish them but to fulfill them. I tell you the truth, until heaven and earth disappear, not the smallest letter, not the least stroke of a pen, will by any means disappear from the Law until everything is accomplished. Anyone who breaks one of the least of these commandments and teaches others to do the same will be called least in the kingdom of heaven, but whoever practices and teaches these commands will be called great in the kingdom of heaven. For I tell you that unless your righteousness surpasses that of the Pharisees and the teachers of the law, you will certainly not enter the kingdom of heaven."*

That seems to this writer to be in clear straight forward language. I interpret this to mean that we are to obey the ordinances established by God until the appearing of the New Earth and the New Jerusalem!

Some may say that it is the New Testament act of the Lord's Supper that has replaced the ordained feasts. That wouldn't do justice to God the Father or to His Son. Every verse pertaining to the feasts identified in Leviticus tell us that *it shall be a statute forever in your generations!* What part of that didn't you understand? Was it statute? That means it was a law! Was it forever? Yes! That means it shall be forever! Is it in your generations, past present and future? That means the continued presence of mankind upon this planet!

Let's investigate what misled mankind from the instructions given by God. I can show you one of the cop-out answers that has been used to convince mankind the original church changed this and modern man did not. Look at the book of Acts in the 15th chapter. In this chapter there is great discussion over the new Gentile believers need to be circumcised as required by Hebrew Law. After a lengthy discussion James, the brother of Jesus and leader of the church at Jerusalem, stood up and told the others that they should listen to Peter and not place an extra burden upon the new believer by following everything of the law when they themselves could not. Here is the text: Acts 15:5-21, *But some of the sect of the Pharisees who believed rose up, saying, "It is necessary to circumcise them, and to command them to keep the law of Moses."*

Now the apostles and elders came together to consider this matter. And when there had been much dispute, Peter rose up and said to them: "Men and brethren, you know that a good while ago God chose among us, that by my mouth the Gentiles should hear the word of the gospel and believe. So God, who knows the heart, acknowledged them by giving them the Holy Spirit, just as He did to us, and made no distinction between us and them, purifying their hearts by faith. Now therefore, why do you test God by putting a yoke on the neck of the disciples which neither our fathers nor we were able to bear? But we believe that through the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ we shall be saved in the same manner as they."

Then all the multitude kept silent and listened to Barnabas and Paul declaring how many miracles and wonders God had worked through them among the Gentiles. And after they had become silent, James answered, saying, "Men and brethren, listen to me: Simon has declared how God at the first visited the Gentiles to take out of them a people for His name. And with this the words of the prophets agree, just as it is written: 'After this I will return and will rebuild the tabernacle of David, which has fallen down; I will rebuild its ruins, and I will set it up; so that the rest of mankind may seek the LORD, even all the Gentiles who are called by My name,' " says the LORD who does all these things.

"Known to God from eternity are all His works. Therefore I judge that we should not trouble those from among the Gentiles who are turning to God, but that we write to them to abstain from things polluted by idols, from sexual immorality, from things strangled, and from blood. For Moses has had throughout many generations those who preach him in every city, being read in the synagogues every Sabbath."

There is a second reference in the book of Acts that the modern day church likes to use to illustrate why the day of worship was changed from the Sabbath to Sunday. This second reference is in Acts 20:7-12: *Now on the first day of the week, when the disciples came together to break bread, Paul, ready to depart the next day, spoke to them and continued his message until midnight. There were many lamps in the upper room where they were gathered together. And in a window sat a certain young man named Eutychus, who was sinking into a deep sleep. He was overcome by sleep; and as Paul continued speaking, he fell down from the third story and was taken up dead. But Paul went down, fell on him, and embracing him said, "Do not trouble yourselves, for his life is in him." Now when he had come up, had broken bread and eaten, and talked a long while, even till daybreak, he departed. And they brought the young man in alive, and they were not a little comforted. Then we went ahead to the ship and sailed to Assos, there intending to take Paul on board; for so he had given orders, intending himself to go on foot.*

I have been told by other Biblical scholars that this indicates that the church was meeting on the first day of the week within 40 years of Jesus' crucifixion and that on this occasion of the Lord's Day they not only met, they also took communion. All I can say is nonsense! First off, any person with the ability to read should be able to see in the second half of the 7th verse that Paul and his party were in a hurry to get to Jerusalem. They did not have time to wait until the next Sabbath to speak to the people. Therefore the reason for meeting on this occasion on the first day of the week. Paul actually arrived on the Sabbath and did not begin to speak to these people until after that particular Sabbath was over. The Sabbath would be over at sundown, or the time for the evening meal where they would break bread, or in another word, eat.

They could eat after sundown which would be on the first day of the week as was the custom of the Jews to address the changing of the days in this manner. Notice the verse that reads that Paul spoke until midnight. This meant that the Sabbath was over and the first day of the week had begun thus he could speak to the people until midnight on the first day of the week and no one had violated the Sabbath.

The second portion of the scholarly statement is that they took communion. Wrong! Other scholars use the expression *when the disciples came together to break bread* as their basis for supporting that the communion was served. I really don't think so! If I go through text and seek out two phrases it will show that the breaking of bread indicates eating and the taking of the cup means communion. These verses here do not say anything about the taking of the cup. Read verse 11, this verse plainly states that Paul went upstairs, broke bread and ate. There is neither a reason for changing the day of worship from the Sabbath nor the taking of communion in these verses. The whole statement made by scholarly men is strictly their attempt to justify something they do not want to observe, or at the very least to understand.

The answer I can give you for all this is Satan! Remember back in Luke, chapter 4, verse 13 that Satan was waiting for an opportune time. His opportune time blended mankind, power, church and lies together to form religion. There is no verse in the entire Bible that identifies an observance of the ordinances given by God as a religion. There are only five verses in the Bible that even use the word religion. None of these verses are in the Old Testament. The place where the ordinances of God were set up and the point that the basis for the New Covenant took shape are in the Old Testament.

Here are the five verses:

Acts 25:19, "*But had some questions against him about their own religion and about a certain Jesus, who had died, whom Paul affirmed to be alive.*" This verse pertains to the Jewish religion that had been set up by the Rabbinical system.

Acts 26:5, "*They knew me from the first, if they were willing to testify, that according to the strictest sect of our religion I lived a Pharisee.*" Again, this is a reference to the Jewish religion under the Rabbinical system.

Colossians 2:23, *These things indeed have an appearance of wisdom in self-imposed religion, false humility, and neglect of the body, but are of no value against the indulgence of the flesh.* The underlined says it all.

James 1:26, *If anyone among you thinks he is religious, and does not bridle his tongue but deceives his own heart, this one's religion is useless.* This is a generalized statement spoken by James.

James 1:27, *Pure and undefiled religion before God and the Father is this: to visit orphans and widows in their trouble, and to keep oneself unspotted from the world.* This is a statement showing the true Way of Christ! We are to help one another, especially those who are less fortunate, and to discipline ourselves from the blemishes of the flesh.

I will not be foolish and tell you that there are no references in the Bible to any religion. There are references to both Judaism and to Christianity. If you really study the teachings of Jesus you will

find the teachings of loving your neighbor as yourself, and not the pomp and ceremony of religion. In fact it was Jesus' acts outside of the Rabbinical system of ceremony and their interpretation of the law that got Christ into trouble with the Jews in the first place. Did you notice I used the term Jews? It seems that Jesus liked to call the Sadducees, Pharisees and Scribes the Jews and even went so far as to tell the Apostle John the following in Revelation 2:8-9. *"And to the angel of the church in Smyrna write, 'These things says the First and the Last, who was dead, and came to life: I know your works, tribulation, and poverty (but you are rich); and I know the blasphemy of those who say they are Jews and are not, but are a synagogue of Satan.'"*

Jesus used this statement a second time in the statement made to the church at Philadelphia. We read the second record of this statement in Revelation 3:7-10, *"And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write, 'These things says He who is holy, He who is true, He who has the key of David, He who opens and no one shuts, and shuts and no one opens: I know your works. See, I have set before you an open door, and no one can shut it; for you have a little strength, have kept My word, and have not denied My name. Indeed I will make those of the synagogue of Satan, who say they are Jews and are not, but lie—indeed I will make them come and worship before your feet, and to know that I have loved you. Because you have kept My command to persevere, I also will keep you from the hour of trial which shall come upon the whole world, to test those who dwell on the earth.'"*

We started this study of lies and deception with various types of hype (or lies) that we are exposed to on a daily basis. Would you agree that the cause of most hype is greed? I'm talking about such greed that is not for an honest profit or for an honest day's pay for the work you do. I mean out-and-out absolute greed! Is there a difference between a company making a profit and a company getting out of control for the sake of greed? For an example, during the late part of 2001 and the early part of the year 2002 we saw the fall of a company known as Enron. What was the major cause for the fall? Wasn't it greed and not an honest profit? An honest profit would have established that the company's accounting books were okay and that numerous partnerships did not have to be arranged to mask the corruption and the profit taking by the leadership. Another question. Why is it necessary to pay the executives of a company such ridiculously high salaries? You mean you can't find someone who would lead a company for less than a million dollars a year? What about a basketball player? You mean you can't find one who would play for less than a million a year? What happened to honest leadership or even sportsmanship?

One more example! Watch the Red Lobster commercials on television and tell me what is wrong with them? Watch: the lobsters walk across the bottom of the sea; a man looking at a lobster in an aquarium; and, the one where the life guard runs into the ocean and raises a lobster. What color are the lobsters? Aren't they all red? Do you know how you get a red lobster? The only way that I know is to cook (boil) the lobster, therefore every one of the lobsters in the commercials are not only dead, they are all cooked. This means they cannot move as they are shown on television. It's just another way to get you to believe something that isn't true. The truth is most people wouldn't want to watch a commercial with live dull brown lobsters. Since the red ones look so much better to the eye, who is going to stop and think whether the lobster is alive or dead, or if it can really move while it is dead. Look at commercials in general. For one thing they have taken over most public television programming. Even the local newscast during a thirty minute time period contains over ten minutes of commercials. It has been said that all good deceptions must have a certain portion of truth. The question is, what portion, what truth? It seems that good marketing practices must contain some portion of deception.

There is no wonder Satan has gotten into the inner reaches of the organized church. The priest in Moses' time received food to eat and some of the gifts presented to God as their livelihood. Would the priest of Moses' time have been considered bad in the sight of God if they took money from people and told the people they would say a super special prayer for them? Did the people of Moses' time believe the priest might have some special power or connection to God and could get a special answer

from God if the priest was paid a little extra? Do you think God would have been upset if something like that happened then?

Then why do we do this today? Sure we do! We do it in church, and we do it with television preachers. They ask for special gifts because they need the money, so we give them something extra and think we're going to get some special answer direct from God. Don't you think it would have been the same thing as today if the priest of Moses' time started selling extra special favors? Isn't it an extra special favor to go and ask a leader of the church to intercede on your behalf and have your sins forgiven. What happened to Christ being given as a sacrifice for all of mankind's sins? What does it mean when you are told by church leaders that you can't understand the Bible so don't bother to read it, and if you want a question answered, ask the church leader?

What does it mean if you are told that you need another book in addition to the Bible to understand your church's particular dogma? Don't you think God would give you the correct answers the first time, in His book? Maybe, your church thinks it is above God and God didn't tell you the truth the first time. Well, what about a writer, or pastor, or teacher that must use five, ten, even one hundred references, other than the Bible, to show you their particular thinking? Have you noticed that I have attempted to primarily use the Bible itself to bring you these truths? I shown you that in certain verses it was God, or Joshua (Jesus) who was making the statement. So why is it you desire to let other people tell you lies? You must want to be deceived because you have not learned how to understand the truth? Maybe, there is another answer! Maybe you have been deceived because someone who didn't understand the truth taught you what you know. Either way you have not received the full benefit of truth. Let me show you a little more of what I mean.

I'm going to talk about things in our present day society. Look at the field of medicine. The oath taken by doctors used to mean they would work to find a cure for your illness. Doesn't it seem, if you go to the doctor today, the first question is, Do you have insurance? and not What seems to be the problem? Why is it we have so many television commercials for drugs? Don't the pharmaceutical companies work with doctors to help identify cures? If that were so, the last time we saw a cure was Doctor Salk and his vaccine for polio. Have we cured cancer? Why not? You mean we don't spend enough on research? What about diabetes, or heart disease, or even AIDS? If we listen to television or read the ads in magazines we are taking this pill or that pill to reduce the symptoms. Notice in the ads that the particular pill was designed to reduce the symptom, not to cure the disease. If we cured the disease the pharmaceutical companies would not be making all that money, the executives wouldn't be able to draw that extra large salary and the people would not be tied to the company. Review what the Bible says about healing on page 6.

I am not going to be stupid and try to tell you there are no sicknesses in the world. There are sicknesses in the world because mankind permits them to be and not because God ordained them to be. Since there are sicknesses in the world are there lessons to be learned in the Bible on how to promote healing? Yes! There are! The verses that promote healing are given on pages 6 and 7 and are printed in full and will not be repeated here.

Think about this, when I started showing you the truth I illustrated for you the power of the tongue and told you the effect that it could have upon others as well as upon yourself. Now, think about this, Jesus was called the great physician — why? The verses I've shown clearly illustrate that Jesus was the great physician simply because He took all our sicknesses with Him. So, if a follower believes in Jesus, they have the power inside of themselves to heal their own self. We can use the assistance of a doctor and an honest doctor will tell you they are only assisting the body to do what the body does best, heal itself. However, if the doctor tells you they need to run another test and that test comes back negative, then they need to run another test. That doctor is only benefiting from your insurance company and not trying to assist you to heal yourself. I stated above that God did not ordain sickness in the

world. Sickness is Satan's handiwork. I must tell you it was not God's intent for mankind to be sick. The earth is the kingdom of Satan? Look at the following verses to see that this is true.

John 12:31, "*Now is the judgment of this world; now the ruler of this world will be cast out.*"

John 14:30, "*I will no longer talk much with you, for the ruler of this world is coming, and he has nothing in Me.*"

John 16:11, "*Of judgment, because the ruler of this world is judged.*"

In each verse the speaker is Jesus and he is talking about Satan as the ruler of this world. Consider the facts. God loves His creation and for every disease that Satan throws our way God has placed a natural cure someplace on the earth for us to find and use.

The greatest example that God intended for us to be well is inside of every one of us. We call it the immune system, that was designed by God. When working as intended it does what it was supposed to do, keep us well. Alas, there are factors that can cause the immune system to mess up and not work as God intended. Diet and exercise are only two things that can throw the immune system out of whack. These are things that you have in your control. You can eat healthy food and you can exercise. The real question is will you? Remember, you are now working on a personal body design that will last a lifetime. Are you building a strong sleek shape or a plain brown bag shape? You decide!

Now, in similar fashion we hear advertisements about this lawyer or that lawyer and how much money they can get you in a settlement. Interesting, they don't tell you the percentage of the settlement they are going to keep for representing you. If you really knew all the facts, you can represent yourself in any court of law. All you have to do is make the statement that you are representing yourself, *Pro Se*. Did you know that you could issue subpoenas and take dispossessions just as any lawyer can? Granted, you probably would need to spend several days in a good law library (most law schools have one that you can use) so that you know the procedures on how to get things done. The point is that you really can represent yourself in a court of law.

Most of us don't take the time to read the fine print, or listen to the super fast talk that gives all the extra-required information on side effects of taking a particular pill. Sometimes if we would take the interest to read the fine print or listen to those extra fast spoken words, we would find that the benefit is somehow lost in what we are not going to get or what the company bringing us the benefit is going to get.

Think about this! It is the little guy in the production line who is the person that is creating the product that is for-sale or who is the customer service agent for the company. It is this person's position in the company that actually has the rubber meeting the road (so to speak), not in some executive office where decisions are made on how to present the product in this light, or that light, to show off its best side. Maybe, the lawyers for the company really need all those big bucks for writing the fine print that leaves you hanging the day after the warranty runs out because they didn't want to build the best product they could. They choose to build a product so that you had to come back and get another one, and another one, and another one. Engineered obsolescence!

Our society is so deceived that it puts black people against white people, blacks against Hispanics, most people against Native Americans, the rich against the poor, male against female, kids against parents, North against South, West against East, Democrat against Republican, conservative against liberal and vice-versa in all these cases.

Okay time for a pop quiz! Our society doesn't seem to take the time to understand, or listen to many things. The following is a little test to see how you listen (in this case read because we can't speak these questions to you). Hey! This is a fun test that you can take now and you can use it later on your friends. Get a piece of paper and answer the following:

1. Do they have a 4th of July in England?
2. How many birthdays does the average person have?
3. Some months have 31 days; how many have 28?
4. How many outs are there in an inning?
5. Is it legal for a man in California to marry his widow's sister?
6. Divide 30 by $\frac{1}{2}$ and add 10. What is the answer?
7. If there are 3 apples and you take away 2, how many do you have?
8. A doctor gives you three pills telling you to take one every half hour. How many minutes will it take before the pills are gone?
9. A farmer has 17 sheep, and all but 9 die. How many are left?
10. How many animals of each sex did Moses take on the ark?
11. How many two-cent stamps are there in a dozen?

The answers are at the end of the book, page 137.

Remember, we are giving a summary of the various books from the Abundant Life Series and the words written here were given in the book entitled *Threshold*, written for teens. Therefore, I have tried to show you in these words that as you grow toward becoming an adult you can face many challenges of hype, deception and out-and-out lies. There is no place free from the effect of lies and it is up to you to understand what is going on around you. I will make a statement that I hope you fully understand. No child needs to be sheltered from everything in life! If you are protected under a basket from any and everything: How will you know about the danger; how to say **NO!** and move on with your life? I could say that this represents smoking, drugs, or drinking alcohol. But, what about television, the computer, movies, magazines and even video games? Isn't there crime, violence, and sex in these areas of day-to-day life? So how do you answer your friends about becoming involved with a gang or how do you tell your boyfriend **NO!** if he starts talking about sex in every other sentence?

There are several places that I've written the one command left us by Jesus. One such place is on page 33 of this book and there are others. In several of those places I used this one reference to shrink the Ten Commandments down to one statement. John 13:34-35: "*A new commandment I give to you, that you love one another; as I have loved you, that you also love one another. "By this all will know that you are My disciples, if you have love for one another."*" Think about these verses. If we all did as these verses commanded there would be no hype, no deception and certainly no lies. We would all live life to the fullest and love our fellowman. We would honor each other by being honest and trustworthy and have love for everyone. There is a reason to write these things to you. You represent the next generation. My generation may be old dogs who fail at learning new tricks, but your generation is just entering the threshold and have so much ahead of you. With love, understanding, guidance of the truth and the grace of God the Father you are on your way to being who you are to become.

Another Lesson

Over the course of the last twenty to thirty years there have been many great writers who have written something pertaining to the Great Tribulation or the Millennial reign of Christ. Hal Lindsay has written *The Rapture*, Tim LaHaye and Jerry Jenkins have written the *Left Behind* series, Tim LaHaye has also written or coauthored other books charting the end times and the telling of prophecies of things to come.

With so much already written why is there a need to write anything more on the subject? The answer is an emphatic and resounding yes! That answer would go back to the preface of this book and the question: **Have We All Been Lied To?** Satan has attacked the truth through the church, the very instrument that was to bring us the truth. Satan did begin a great deception shortly after the resurrection of Christ and he instilled in the minds of men to write things that were inaccurate. Satan did place ideas into the hearts of people in church leadership positions to build themselves up instead of God. Has the church established false principles that have now turned into traditions and no-one seems willing to step away from those traditions to get back to the truth?

I believe that this has happened and that is the reason, and the need, for this chapter. You can read all those other works and feel good about yourself and your beliefs, but what if, just what if, it was all wrong and the truth remains hidden? Are you willing to read one other document on the subject? Please, let us remember that God created us as freewill agents and we will always have at least two choices from which to choose. If you go along with the traditions that have become standards of belief, then is the only other choice non-belief? Really, with over seven billion people in the world do you really want me to believe that there are only these two opinions and choices for the interpretation of God's holy word? Well, God must have sent an angel to present a third opinion, because frankly the other two stink.

The opinion of non-belief is exactly that: No belief. That's no belief in God the Father! No belief in God sending Himself incarnate as His Son to redeem mankind! No belief in an afterlife! No belief in heaven and Hell! To these individuals, life is what you make it and you only have one shot at it. When life is over there is nothing more. Can you accept this reasoning? I can't because every morning when I get out of bed the reasons for life overwhelm me: the sun, the air, the grass, the rain, the moon, the stars, the trees, the animals, the other people I meet all day long tells me that there is a God who created all these things. If I believe all these things then the statements made in the Bible must be true.

The other choice to me is a pathway of deception. Over the course of the last two thousand years the church has had many changes in its structure. The first thousand years there was only one church, then two for an additional 600 years and then three. Now we have over 38,000 denominations represented. But let's go back and look at that first 1600 years prior to the Protestant Reformation. The church is not the only source of history during this period. While I believe that there was a suppression of written records that may be contrary to church history, I do believe that these documents exist and can be read. I also believe that careful reading of the church documents themselves will reveal much concerning the thinking and ideas of the men who lead the church. As certain principles were handed down they were not questioned by common man because the common man did not have the education, the training, or even the time to read the records established before to see if a new principle was the truth or a deception. At this same time the records were not made available for the common man to even have access to them, even if they could have read the records. This led to many ideas becoming a

tradition of men. This second choice of belief seems to be the easy way out for many. People seem to be lazy by nature, they do not want to work and search to see if what they believe is the truth. They put their trust in other men who have education, position, wealth, or power and go on their merry way without a single thought toward what they really believe. Therefore the things written in this book are contrary to them and they perceive this book as a false presentation. They never once attempt to find out if what is being presented is in fact the truth. It is for these very reasons that I care to believe that I've been lead to present another view. The attempt has been made to show you Biblical text as it is written in the KJV, the NKJV and the NIV translations. There are comparisons of verses and everything being said is backed up by the scriptures in plain view. I do not ask you to get up and walk across the room to get your Bible to see if the verse is correct. The verse is given in every situation. So, the question remains: **Have we all been lied to?** Is the belief in the traditional practices and beliefs a great deception? If so, what is the untarnished viewpoint?

The choice that I am lead to present in this work is common sense, that once great attribute that God gave to every one of us. It is our ability to think, to reason, to question, to learn and to choose wisely the beliefs that we hold dear to ourselves. These are God given tools for mankind to use, however, it does take a little work to use these tools correctly. If we are not going to read, to study, to search for other sources of information, if we are not going to weigh the information for accuracy and truth, but accept it because it comes from such-and-such place or person, then we are not using the tools that God gave us for that purpose. We defeat ourselves because we have accepted the ideas and thoughts of someone else to lead us down our path that leads to either everlasting joy or everlasting discomfort. Strangely, I really don't want to leave that important choice in the hands of someone else. It seems very important to me that **I** understand the truth for myself and make my decision upon the information that I myself have found. It is through prayer, study, work, and the grace of God that will lead me to the choice that I will make for myself. It will not be based upon the sayings, interpretations, preaching, Bible study, books, written instructions of others that I am going to make this life changing decision.

The funny thing to me is this. It does not matter which choice you make. The choice you make will be your choice. The place that you end up will be based upon that choice. You are not going to be able to blame anyone else for your choice. If you choose to not believe that is your choice and if there really is a Hell with an everlasting fire then you made the choice to be there. If you choose to follow someone else's lead and make a choice based upon their information that is your choice. After death if you find yourself in heaven the choice was a good choice, but if you find yourself in Hell because it was a deception, it was a bad choice. In similar fashion if you work, study and make a choice based upon the information that you personally have found, that is your choice. And, after death, you can find yourself in the exact same situation as the person who left the choice up to another individual. In all three cases there will not be anyone standing there saying "See I Told You So" because everyone of us will be facing the reality of our own choice and no other. There can then be no one to blame. We have chosen to take responsibility for our own life.

With all of that said and done the question remains, where is this chapter going? If others have written about the information to be presented haven't they already covered the material? Wasn't that information enough to make a choice? Interesting question? What if history can show you and prove to you that there wasn't a Rapture Theory until the 1800's. Would that give you a reason to read this chapter and to study more just to see what is being presented? Would that information cause you to rethink some of what you currently believe?

Another question—what if I can show you an error in the *Left Behind* series? In asking that question I am not trying to discredit what Tim LaHaye and Jerry Jenkins have written. Far from it, in fact their series is one of the easiest reading methods to learn what is to happen during the Great Tribulation for many people. Notice I did not say for all people. My question is: If you were shown this

error would it cause you to think and study your Bible more?

It is these questions that cause this chapter to be written. It is this chapter that everything recorded in this work is leading toward. The fullness of the **Quest** rests in what is recorded here. The balance of so much is here. No! It is not my personal reputation that is at stake, nor it is my credit as a teacher, a writer, a parent, or anything else! What is at stake is God's truth, over and above the deception, that has been made to mankind. What does God's own record, as established in His Word, tell us will happen in the Tribulation and Millennial Age to come?

The title for this chapter is *Another Lesson* and I have alluded that I will present answers to the questions I have posed here. All will be as the Holy Spirit guides me. However, I must state before we begin: this chapter will be divided into several sub chapters that will be lengthy. I can't seem to figure out a way to condense the material of knowledge from God's word into smaller portions of information!

I Saw A Rider On A White Horse

When I began this journey it was God's gentle nudging through His Spirit that told me it would be necessary to write things in secular terms so I might get your attention and start your thinking processes. That was done in one of my early books, *Key to Yourself*, as the means with cause and effect as the resultant vehicle to move myself and everyone reading this forward. There was no intent, in any manner, to detract from God's precious free gift of Salvation. It was strictly an approach to get this journey started and to bring you, the reader, along on this **Quest**.

Now, I'm in the most perplexing situation I have ever known. Together we have progressed toward what I call God's Banquet Table and we have covered many spiritual subjects as we approach the filling spiritual steak dinner prepared for all true believers. I have gone back time and time again in the most respectful prayer I can muster to seek guidance on how to prepare this material. Needless to say I have read, reread and read again pages and pages of the Bible, in addition to my previous works and the works of others. It's now time to utter my humble statement, "I do not understand why me! I can only accept God's gift of understanding and His further gift of guidance to me as I attempt to write that understanding. By His wondrous grace through the Holy Spirit I align myself to His will and let my pen run free with that which He gives me."

Questions and more questions. I seem to have a lot of questions. Actually, it is the method that the Holy Spirit says one should use to test people. Do they know? Can they answer? If not show them where the answer is and make it clear so they can understand God's Word! Therefore, my next question: As a Christian what is the next event to occur on God's time table? I thought you might say the Rapture. I must tell you two things: First, the word rapture is not in the Bible. Secondly, I have asked on several occasions in this book, **Have we all been lied to?** I have also expressed an appreciation for the *Left Behind* series as illustration of many accounts in Revelation. I also asked what if I could show an error in that presentation? What really started the series? Wasn't it the rapture, especially the airplane flight where people suddenly vanished?

Is there another event that has started, is currently intensifying, and will actually culminate with the event we normally call the rapture? That really poses a question of thought! If there is such an event what is it?

Where in the *Left Behind* series, and most of the other books concerning the End Times, do we hear, or read, anything about the Great Apostasy (or falling away of the church)? Look at the following: 2 Thessalonians 2:3 KJV, *Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except*

there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition. Let us look first at the statement: *for that day shall not come.* What day? The answer is in 2 Thessalonians 2:2 KJV, *That ye be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter as from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand.* Secondly, look at the apostasy statement. It says that this day can not come until two things happen: first, the falling away; and secondly, the coming of the man of sin (the Antichrist).

Truly, I tell you this, this cannot be a hard lesson to learn. If you read the letters to the Thessalonians you should grasp the teachings that Paul gave them, including the plan of Salvation, other truths, and the Second Coming of Christ. Would you believe that all of this was taught to these new believers in three weeks time? Turn over to Acts 17:2-4 NIV *As his custom was, Paul went into the synagogue, and on three Sabbath days he reasoned with them from the Scriptures, explaining and proving that the Christ had to suffer and rise from the dead. "This Jesus I am proclaiming to you is the Christ," he said. Some of the Jews were persuaded and joined Paul and Silus, as did a large number of God-fearing Greeks and not a few prominent women.*

Three weeks! They learned all this in three weeks and believed! Now, this day, today, if I come along and give verse after verse showing these things I get one rude statement after another made to me. Okay, your turn, you've been in church for how many years? Have you received teaching on everything that the Thessalonians were taught?

Hey, there's another great statement that is made in these verses. Recall the discussion about the Sabbath where the theologian wanted me to accept that Paul taught on the first day of the week, Sunday. This was because it was The Lord's Day. Acts 20:7, *Now on the first day of the week, when the disciples came together to break bread, Paul, ready to depart the next day, spoke to them and continued his message until midnight.* I still think it's interesting that he couldn't read and accept that the reason they came together was to eat and Paul was rushing so he could leave. Now, look at the first four words of Acts 17:2, *As his custom was. . . .* Do you really think, and believe, that Paul was going to change his custom within the account given in three short chapters of the book of Acts? Let us remember that these particular chapters are part of the journal entries made by Luke as he went with Paul, Silus and Timothy.

It seems very clear to me that there is an apostasy to occur and the church, in part, will fall away from believing in Christ. Is there any clear point that identifies and addresses this as a fact? Yes! I am lead to believe there is. It is given in the second and third chapters of Revelation where the seven churches in Asia are identified and illustrated.

What is there in these two chapters that we can learn about the taking out of the true church? If you need more understanding of Revelation read my book *Days to Come*.

At this point we are going to look at each church situation from the NIV:

Ephesus — . . . *I hold this against you: you have forsaken your first love. . . . To him who overcomes, I will give the right to eat from the tree of life. . . .*

Revelation 2:1-7, *To the angel of the church in Ephesus write: "These are the words of him who holds the seven stars in his right hand and walks among the seven golden lampstands: I know your deeds, your hard work and your perseverance. I know that you cannot tolerate wicked men, that you have tested those who claim to be apostles but are not, and have found them false. You have persevered and have endured hardships for my name, and have not grown weary. Yet I hold this against you: you have forsaken your first love. Remember the height from which you have fallen! Repent and do the things you did at first. If you do not repent, I will come to you and remove your lampstand from its place. But you have this in your favor: you hate the practices of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate. He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To him who overcomes, I will give the right to eat*

from the tree of life, which is in the paradise of God.”

Smyrna — . . . Do not be afraid of what you are about to suffer. . . . He who overcomes will not be hurt at all by the second death.

Revelation 2:8-11, To the angel of the church in Smyrna write: “These are the words of him who is the First and the Last, who died and came to life again. I know your afflictions and your poverty—yet you are rich! I know the slander of those who say they are Jews and are not, but are a synagogue of Satan. Do not be afraid of what you are about to suffer. I tell you, the devil will put some of you in prison to test you, and you will suffer persecution for ten days. Be faithful, even to the point of death, and I will give you the crown of life. He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. He who overcomes will not be hurt at all by the second death.”

Pergamum — . . . You have people there who hold to the teaching of Balaam, . . . Likewise you also have those who hold to the teachings of the Nicolaitans. . . . To him who overcomes, I will give some of the hidden manna.

Revelation 2:12-17, To the angel of the church in Pergamum write: “These are the words of him who has the sharp, double-edged sword. I know where you live—where Satan has his throne. Yet you remain true to my name. You did not renounce your faith in me, even in the days of Antipas, my faithful witness, who was put to death in your city—where Satan lives. Nevertheless, I have a few things against you: you have people there who hold to the teaching of Balaam, who taught Balak to entice the Israelites to sin by eating food sacrificed to idols and by committing sexual immorality. Likewise you also have those who hold to the teaching of the Nicolaitans. Repent therefore! Otherwise, I will soon come to you and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth. He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To him who overcomes, I will give some of the hidden manna. I will also give him a white stone with a new name written on it, known only to him who receives it.”

Thyatira — . . . You tolerate that woman Jezebel, . . . To him who overcomes and does my will to the end, I will give authority over the nations. . . .

Revelation 2:18-29, To the angel of the church in Thyatira write: “These are the words of the Son of God, whose eyes are like blazing fire and whose feet are like burnished bronze. I know your deeds, your love and faith, your service and perseverance, and that you are now doing more than you did at first. Nevertheless, I have this against you: you tolerate that woman Jezebel, who calls herself a prophetess. By her teaching she misleads my servants into sexual immorality and the eating of food sacrificed to idols. I have given her time to repent of her immorality, but she is unwilling. So I will cast her on a bed of suffering, and I will make those who commit adultery with her suffer intensely, unless they repent of her ways. I will strike her children dead. Then all the churches will know that I am he who searches hearts and minds, and I will repay each of you according to your deeds. Now I say to the rest of you in Thyatira, to you who do not hold to her teaching and have not learned Satan’s so-called deep secrets (I will not impose any other burden on you): only hold on to what you have until I come. To him who overcomes and does my will to the end, I will give authority over the nations— ‘He will rule them with an iron scepter; he will dash them to pieces like pottery’ — just as I have received authority from my Father. I will also give him the morning star. He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.”

Sardis — . . . Strengthen what remains and is about to die, . . . He who overcomes will, like them, be dressed in white.

Revelation 3:1-6, To the angel of the church in Sardis write: “These are the words of him who holds the seven spirits of God and the seven stars. I know your deeds; you have a reputation of being alive, but you are dead. Wake up! Strengthen what remains and is about to die, for I have not found your deeds

complete in the sight of my God. Remember, therefore, what you have received and heard; obey it, and repent. But if you do not wake up, I will come like a thief, and you will not know at what time I will come to you. Yet you have a few people in Sardis who have not soiled their clothes. They will walk with me, dressed in white, for they are worthy. He who overcomes will, like them, be dressed in white. I will never blot out his name from the book of life, but will acknowledge his name before my Father and his angels. He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.”

Philadelphia — . . . *I will also keep you from the hour of trial that is going to come upon the whole world to test those who live on the earth. . . . He who overcomes I will make a pillar in the temple of my God. Revelation 3:7-13, To the angel of the church in Philadelphia write: “These are the words of him who is holy and true, who holds the key of David. What he opens no one can shut, and what he shuts no one can open. I know your deeds. See, I have placed before you an open door that no one can shut. I know that you have little strength, yet you have kept my word and have not denied my name. I will make those who are of the synagogue of Satan, who claim to be Jews though they are not, but are liars—I will make them come and fall down at your feet and acknowledge that I have loved you. Since you have kept my command to endure patiently, I will also keep you from the hour of trial that is going to come upon the whole world to test those who live on the earth. I am coming soon. Hold on to what you have, so that no one will take your crown. Him who overcomes I will make a pillar in the temple of my God. Never again will he leave it. I will write on him the name of my God and the name of the city of my God, the new Jerusalem, which is coming down out of heaven from my God; and I will also write on him my new name. He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.”*

Laodicea — . . . *Because you are lukewarm—neither hot nor cold—I am about to spit you out of my mouth . . . To him who overcomes, I will give the right to sit with me on my throne, just as I overcame and sat down with my Father on his throne.*

Revelation 3:14-22, *“To the angel of the church in Laodicea write: These are the words of the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the ruler of God’s creation. I know your deeds, that you are neither cold nor hot. I wish you were either one or the other! So, because you are lukewarm—neither hot nor cold—I am about to spit you out of my mouth. You say, ‘I am rich; I have acquired wealth and do not need a thing.’ But you do not realize that you are wretched, pitiful, poor, blind and naked. I counsel you to buy from me gold refined in the fire, so you can become rich; and white clothes to wear, so you can cover your shameful nakedness; and salve to put on your eyes, so you can see. Those whom I love I rebuke and discipline. So be earnest, and repent. Here I am! I stand at the door and knock. If anyone hears my voice and opens the door, I will come in and eat with him, and he with me. To him who overcomes, I will give the right to sit with me on my throne, just as I overcame and sat down with my Father on his throne. He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.”*

My spirit yells at me to take notice: Only one church has a statement made to them that they *will be kept from the hour of trial that is coming upon the whole world.* Notice further that if those who are doing wrong correct the situation and repent, they will *be in heaven, dressed in white, eat manna, judge the nations, eat of the tree of life and not face the second death.*

Have we all been lied to? How many times, in how many churches, have I heard that **all** of the church will be removed in the rapture event. If that is the case, why is it that only the church at Philadelphia is told they will not go through the hour of trial?

Here comes one of those hard statements. The Spirit tells me these are the types of churches currently in the world: By their attitude, they are the church of feel good, the church of good works, the church of tolerance, the church of the padded pew, the church of the big gym and the church of dress

nice and drive a Lexus. It is these type churches who are going to find their members being those who are left behind.

The beginning of the Tribulation period will come in quick sequence with the true church taken out, the Antichrist revealed and those left behind must decide if they want to once-and-for-all accept Christ as Lord and Savior and stop the wishy-washy games or decline God's offer and chase after the rider on the first white horse.

Is the True Church Removed?

Yes! My studies over the last thirty-five years have come to this question, searched for an answer, backed away, and returned to do it all again. What tells me the true church is removed? Simply stated: The Word tells me so. Look once again at the statement made to the church at Philadelphia. Revelation 3:10 NIV, *Since you have kept my command to endure patiently, I will also keep you from the hour of trial that is going to come upon the whole world to test those who live on the earth.*

Let's back this up with the confirmation from Paul. 1 Thessalonians 4:15-17, *For this we say to you by the word of the Lord, that we who are alive and remain until the coming of the Lord will by no means precede those who are asleep. For the Lord Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of an archangel, and with the trumpet of God. And the dead in Christ will rise first. Then we who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And thus we shall always be with the Lord.* Okay, we have the statement made by the Apostle to the Gentiles. What about a statement from Christ? Before the statement please understand to whom Christ was sent. Matthew 15:24, *But He answered and said, "I was not sent except to the lost sheep of the house of Israel."*

Look very carefully at the wording of this verse. Jesus was sent by the Father to the ten lost tribes of Israel! If you need further proof of this, read my book *The Thirteenth Tribe of Israel*. Secondly, it would not be the full revelation from the Father if Christ did not make some form of general reference that would include Gentiles even if Christ was sent to the lost sheep of Israel. Look at Christ's own statement. John 14:2-4, *"In My Father's house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you to Myself; that where I am, there you may be also. And where I go you know, and the way you know."* John 10:16, *"And other sheep I have which are not of this fold; them also I must bring, and they will hear My voice; and there will be one flock and one shepherd.* We can say from these verses that Christ had followers within Israel, Matthew 15:24, and also outside of Israel, John 10:16. In either case there must be a point that the true church is removed. I say this for a reason. If Jesus tells us that He was going to prepare a place for us in His Father's house of what use would these mansions be if we never saw them or used them?

Consider that there are those who believe because of the tradition. However, here are important statements for understanding:

Mark 13:13, *"And you will be hated by all for My name's sake. But he who endures to the end shall be saved."*

Matthew 24:29-31, *"Immediately after the tribulation of those days the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light; the stars will fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken. Then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in heaven, and then all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. And He will send His angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they will gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other."*

Luke 21:9, *“But when you hear of wars and commotions, do not be terrified; for these things must come to pass first, but the end will not come immediately.”*

Luke 21:24, *“And they will fall by the edge of the sword, and be led away captive into all nations. And Jerusalem will be trampled by Gentiles until the times of the Gentiles are fulfilled.”*

Luke 21:28, *“Now when these things begin to happen, look up and lift up your heads, because your redemption draws near.”*

Wonderful verses but here is the catch. Most of what is thought of as the church must go through the Tribulation! Why would Christ tell us mansions were being prepared for us if the church were to meet Christ in the air just to transfigure into glorified spiritual bodies and return immediately to earth to reign with Christ during the Millennial Age?

It would seem more realistic that the true church is taken out prior to the start of the Tribulation and that there are three groups who must go through the Tribulation period. These groups are: those left behind as (1) left behind Gentile believers, (2) left behind Jewish believers, and (3) the unbelievers. Those who were left behind as a believer just didn't trust, or fully believe, in Christ. I feel that these three groups can be seen in Christ's Revelation account that He gave to John. Look at the opening of the fifth seal. Revelation 6:9-11, *When He opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of those who had been slain for the word of God and for the testimony which they held. And they cried with a loud voice, saying, “How long, O Lord, holy and true, until You judge and avenge our blood on those who dwell on the earth?” Then a white robe was given to each of them; and it was said to them that they should rest a little while longer, until both the number of their fellow servants and their brethren, who would be killed as they were, was completed.*

Notice several things: First, these are martyrs as shown in verse 9. Secondly, others will be killed, both fellow servants (Gentile believers) and brothers (Jewish believers). If you really must see the unbelievers read: Revelation 18, *After these things I saw another angel coming down from heaven, having great authority, and the earth was illuminated with his glory. And he cried mightily with a loud voice, saying, “Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and has become a dwelling place of demons, a prison for every foul spirit, and a cage for every unclean and hated bird! For all the nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth have become rich through the abundance of her luxury.”*

And I heard another voice from heaven saying, “Come out of her, my people, lest you share in her sins, and lest you receive of her plagues. For her sins have reached to heaven, and God has remembered her iniquities. Render to her just as she rendered to you, and repay her double according to her works; in the cup which she has mixed, mix double for her. In the measure that she glorified herself and lived luxuriously, in the same measure give her torment and sorrow; for she says in her heart, ‘I sit as queen, and am no widow, and will not see sorrow.’ Therefore her plagues will come in one day; death and mourning and famine. And she will be utterly burned with fire, for strong is the Lord God who judges her. The kings of the earth who committed fornication and lived luxuriously with her will weep and lament for her, when they see the smoke of her burning, standing at a distance for fear of her torment, saying, ‘Alas, alas, that great city Babylon, that mighty city! For in one hour your judgment has come.’ ”

“And the merchants of the earth will weep and mourn over her, for no one buys their merchandise anymore: merchandise of gold and silver, precious stones and pearls, fine linen and purple, silk and scarlet, every kind of citron wood, every kind of object of ivory, every kind of object of most precious wood, bronze, iron, and marble; and cinnamon and incense, fragrant oil and frankincense, wine and oil, fine flour and wheat, cattle and sheep, horses and chariots, and bodies and souls of men. The fruit that your soul longed for has gone from you, and all the things which are rich and splendid have gone from you, and you shall find them no more at all. The merchants of these things, who became

rich by her, will stand at a distance for fear of her torment, weeping and wailing, and saying, 'Alas, alas, that great city that was clothed in fine linen, purple, and scarlet, and adorned with gold and precious stones and pearls! For in one hour such great riches came to nothing.'"

"Every shipmaster, all who travel by ship, sailors, and as many as trade on the sea, stood at a distance and cried out when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, 'What is like this great city?' They threw dust on their heads and cried out, weeping and wailing, and saying, 'Alas, alas, that great city, in which all who had ships on the sea became rich by her wealth! For in one hour she is made desolate.' Rejoice over her, O heaven, and you holy apostles and prophets, for God has avenged you on her!"

Then a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone and threw it into the sea, saying, "Thus with violence the great city Babylon shall be thrown down, and shall not be found anymore. The sound of harpists, musicians, flutists, and trumpeters shall not be heard in you anymore. No craftsman of any craft shall be found in you anymore, and the sound of a millstone shall not be heard in you anymore. The light of a lamp shall not shine in you anymore, and the voice of bridegroom and bride shall not be heard in you anymore. For your merchants were the great men of the earth, for by your sorcery all the nations were deceived. And in her was found the blood of prophets and saints, and of all who were slain on the earth."

Also, I have explained several other things in showing you that the true church is removed (taken out). What else can I show you that would support this as a fact? We viewed 1 Thessalonians 4:17, *Then we who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And thus we shall always be with the Lord.* This is the main verse supporting the removal (taken out) of the true church?

What about other verses in 1st Thessalonians that support this? 1 Thessalonians 1:10, *And to wait for His Son from heaven, whom He raised from the dead, even Jesus who delivers us from the wrath to come.* They are rescued from the coming wrath. 1 Thessalonians 2:19-20, *For what is our hope, or joy, or crown of rejoicing? Is it not even you in the presence of our Lord Jesus Christ at His coming? For you are our glory and joy.* They are the glory of Paul's work when the Lord comes. 1 Thessalonians 3:13, *So that He may establish your hearts blameless in holiness before our God and Father at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ with all His saints.* They are to be in the presence of all the holy ones. 1 Thessalonians 5:9, *For God did not appoint us to wrath, but to obtain salvation through our Lord Jesus Christ.* It says they were not appointed to suffer wrath but to receive salvation. Look at the assurance statement that Paul uses to close this letter: 1 Thessalonians 5:23-24, *Now may the God of peace Himself sanctify you completely; and may your whole spirit, soul, and body be preserved blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. He who calls you is faithful, who also will do it.*

But, even with all this evidence from Paul I feel that there is even greater evidence from Christ's own statements. Now, you may ask where is it that Christ made such a statement? To be truthful I must say that Christ hid the statement behind another statement. Please, let me explain for this really is not hard to see once you look carefully. Take your red letter edition and look at Matthew 24:36-40, *"But of that day and hour no one knows, not even the angels of heaven, but My Father only. But as the days of Noah were, so also will the coming of the Son of Man be. For as in the days before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered the ark, and did not know until the flood came and took them all away, so also will be the coming of the Son of Man. Then two men will be in the field: one will be taken and the other left."*

The confirmation passage is in Luke 17:26-36, *"And as it was in the days of Noah, so it will be also in the days of the Son of Man: They ate, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noah entered the ark, and the flood came and destroyed them all. Likewise*

as it was also in the days of Lot: They ate, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they built; but on the day that Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven and destroyed them all. Even so will it be in the day when the Son of Man is revealed. In that day, he who is on the housetop, and his goods are in the house, let him not come down to take them away. And likewise the one who is in the field, let him not turn back. Remember Lot's wife. Whoever seeks to save his life will lose it, and whoever loses his life will preserve it. I tell you, in that night there will be two men in one bed: the one will be taken and the other will be left. Two women will be grinding together: the one will be taken and the other left. Two men will be in the field: the one will be taken and the other left."

In both of the above cases we are told by Christ that the coming of the Son of Man will be just as the days of Noah. In the Luke account we even see the inclusion of the situation at Sodom at the time Lot was there in that city. Another point to learn is that God represents completion. All things that had a beginning must come full circle to a closing or completion. There will not be a break that allows chaos! Therefore, some of the end will rest in the beginning and some of the beginning will rest in the end.

What else is there in the story of Noah that we can learn about the removal (taken out) of the true church? This is an interesting question and there is a most interesting answer. Part of the answer comes from Revelation in the telling of the story of the two witnesses, with one suspected of being Elijah and the other Moses. Why Elijah and Moses? Well, because they were the two who were sent to Christ at the Mount of Transfiguration. What was really so special about that one particular event? Christ knew His time of glory was getting near and yet the flesh side of Him feared what was coming. This can be confirmed in Luke 9:30-31 NIV, *Two men, Moses and Elijah, appeared in glorious splendor, talking with Jesus. They spoke about his departure, which he was about to bring to fulfillment at Jerusalem.* Now, let us suppose that the reason Elijah and Moses were sent to comfort Christ went something like this:

Moses said unto Joshua (Christ), "Why is it this, which You must do, bothers You so? Look at me, I lived, I died and I am now in Your Father's house."

Then Elijah said to Joshua, "Look at myself, I lived, I did not die, and yet I am in Your Father's house..

Together they both said, "It does not matter how Your Father may take You from this life, what matters is that You fulfill His will for You."

Why all of this? What do Elijah and Moses have to do with the story of Noah? They themselves do not, however there was another whom God took from off the earth. Just as Christ used the story of Jonah to illustrate His resurrection from the grave, He tells us to look at the story of Noah to see the events pertaining to His Second Coming. To see and understand my next point we once again must look at the story of Noah. Noah becomes the tie-point and here is my question: How many preachers (righteous men) were there before the flood? I thought I might get that answer. Yes! Noah was a righteous man, confirmed by Genesis 6:9, *This is the genealogy of Noah. Noah was a just man, perfect in his generations. Noah walked with God.* He was also a preacher, confirmed in 2 Peter 2:5, *And did not spare the ancient world, but saved Noah, one of eight people, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood on the world of the ungodly.* But, was Noah the only righteous man prior to the flood? Well, let's look again at the statement about Noah in Genesis 6:9. It says that Noah walked with God! Is this statement made about anyone else prior to the flood?

You know that the answer to the question just asked would have to be, Yes! Why else would I set up the question and refer to the story of Noah. Here is the truthful answer. Genesis 5:22-24, *After he begot Methuselah, Enoch walked with God three hundred years, and had sons and daughters. So all*

the days of Enoch were three hundred and sixty-five years. And Enoch walked with God; and he was not, for God took him. The verse states that Enoch walked with God 300 years. But, even stranger is what it says in verse 24. It says that *Enoch walked with God; then he was no more, because God took him away.* That is exactly what we are talking about as an occurrence to the true church. Wisdom should enter at this point and tell us it would be wise to study this closely to determine if there are parallels between these two events. What is Jesus telling us to understand concerning the relationship between the story of Noah and His Second Coming?

We already know from what we have studied that both Enoch and the true church were taken out or are to be taken out, respectively, prior to a period of God's wrath. In the case of Enoch the point of wrath is the flood and in the case of the true church the point of wrath is the Tribulation. Let's look a little closer at the story of Enoch. It says in Genesis 5:21-24, *Enoch lived sixty-five years, and begot Methuselah. After he begot Methuselah, Enoch walked with God three hundred years, and had sons and daughters. So all the days of Enoch were three hundred and sixty-five years. And Enoch walked with God; and he was not, for God took him.* Enoch was 65 when Methuselah was born. Verse 22 tells us something very important. Notice that Enoch's walk with God did not start until Methuselah was born and verse 23 will sum the total of 365 years for the period Enoch was on the earth. Was there something special about the birth of Methuselah that caused his father to turn to God and walk with God for the next 300 years? This walk with God was so special that God himself did not permit Enoch to die, instead God took him.

Now, let's go back to the true church. Is there anything that currently holds back the Tribulation? What I want you to understand is that there is an identified restrainer who's presence holds back the coming of the Tribulation and the coming of the Antichrist. This restrainer must be removed before the wrath of the Tribulation can take place. We have seen many examples of the true church being removed in the teachings Paul gave to the Thessalonians, as recorded in the first letter to them.

However, there is a second letter to the Thessalonians and in that letter we learn more of Paul's teaching to them. I must stop for a moment and make a statement. Over the course of the last thirty years I have observed that each time I venture upon the truth of God, study it, and take it to heart that Satan becomes highly agitated and does everything he can to persuade me to turn from this knowledge, that it is not the traditional view.

I have had to learn the full meaning of putting on the armor of God and of the authority Christ left with the true church. It would seem to me that similar things must have occurred to the Thessalonians. Surely there must have been a false letter sent to this church claiming to be from Paul. I say this because of what we find recorded in 2 Thessalonians 2:2, *Not to be soon shaken in mind or troubled, either by spirit or by word or by letter; as if from us, as though the day of Christ had come.* Paul goes on to tell them the rebellion must occur and the man of lawlessness be revealed. But, the answer we are looking for is in the verses from 2 Thessalonians 2:5-12, *Do you not remember that when I was still with you I told you these things? And now you know what is restraining, that he may be revealed in his own time. For the mystery of lawlessness is already at work; only He who now restrains will do so until He is taken out of the way. And then the lawless one will be revealed, whom the Lord will consume with the breath of His mouth and destroy with the brightness of His coming. The coming of the lawless one is according to the working of Satan, with all power, signs, and lying wonders, and with all unrighteous deception among those who perish, because they did not receive the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this reason God will send them strong delusion, that they should believe the lie, that they all may be condemned who did not believe the truth but had pleasure in unrighteousness.*

Notice the statement in verse 7 above, *Only He who now restrains will do so until He is taken out of the way.* Notice the two pronouns, *He*. Who is it that must be taken out of the way for the man of lawlessness to be revealed? The answer rests in what Christ said about the coming Comforter or Holy

Spirit. John 16:5-16, *“But now I go away to Him who sent Me, and none of you asks Me, ‘Where are You going?’ but because I have said these things to you, sorrow has filled your heart. Nevertheless I tell you the truth. It is to your advantage that I go away; for if I do not go away, the Helper will not come to you; but if I depart, I will send Him to you. And when He has come, He will convict the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment: of sin, because they do not believe in Me; of righteousness, because I go to My Father and you see Me no more; of judgment, because the ruler of this world is judged. I still have many things to say to you, but you cannot bear them now. However, when He, the Spirit of truth, has come, He will guide you into all truth; for He will not speak on His own authority, but whatever He hears He will speak; and He will tell you things to come. He will glorify Me, for He will take of what is Mine and declare it to you. All things that the Father has are Mine. Therefore I said that He will take of Mine and declare it to you. A little while, and you will not see Me; and again a little while, and you will see Me, because I go to the Father.”*

We see some of what Christ said about the Holy Spirit. Christ said He must go away for the Comforter to come. In similar fashion the Comforter must go away for the man of lawlessness to come. And, returning to Genesis and the flood event there surely was one who was the restrainer holding back the flood event. This parallel answer is in the account of Enoch and the birth of Methuselah. Notice that Enoch did not walk with God until Methuselah was born. We can also check scripture to see that Methuselah was the oldest living person. Here’s the answer my spirit tells me. As long as Methuselah lived, the flood was held off and when he died, the flood came. Surely, this must be close to the correct answer for Enoch suddenly changed heart and walked with God for the next 300 years. He was so close to God that God did not permit him to die, but instead took him.

What about Noah and his sons and their wives? How do they come into all this and what is the parallel to the church? Let’s compare notes to this point. Enoch was taken out by God and Methuselah was the restrainer of the flood. Similarly, the true church is taken out and the Holy Spirit is the restrainer that will be removed. But, what do those remaining have to look toward? They’re looking at God’s wrath. Even so, we see that there are those who were, and will, be protected by God. In the flood case it was Noah, his sons and their wives, eight people, who were sealed by God. Oh! You didn’t catch that part where God sealed Noah. I guess I must see things a little different. Look at Genesis 7:16, the last sentence. It says, *Then the Lord shut him in.* That indicates to me that God Himself sealed the door to the ark.

Now, let’s look at the taken out event of the church. We have already seen that there are three groups who have to go through the Tribulation. We saw the left behind Gentile and Jewish believers, and the unbelievers. Notice what happens in Revelation 7:3 NIV, *“Do not harm the land or the sea or the trees until we put a seal on the foreheads of the servants of our God.”* Let’s once again review this single parallel point. Noah and his family were not taken out prior to the flood. They were sealed in the ark by God and protected, but they had to go through the flood event. At the end of this age those who are left behind must make a choice between belief and unbelief. Those who then believe are sealed but must go through the Tribulation. Notice one thing that we can say. Even though these who believe are sealed there is nothing that says they will make it to the end of the Tribulation. In fact we have already seen that some, both Jew and Gentile believers, will die because of their belief in Christ. Revelation 6:11, *Then a white robe was given to each of them; and it was said to them that they should rest a little while longer, until both the number of their fellow servants and their brethren, who would be killed as they were, was completed.*

Now for the awesome truth! In both events most died or will die. In the flood event everyone on earth perished. Yes! I said that correctly because Noah, his sons, and their wives (eight people) were not on the earth, they were in the sealed ark. In similar manner the unbelievers of the Tribulation period will all die. I know some of you don’t believe this and want to be shown. I will, but not just yet, I’ll save

the answer for our discussion on the Millennial Age.

A quick summary! We have searched for scriptures that support a removal, or a taking out, of the true church prior to the Tribulation. Just one more simple question. If the true church is not removed, as some happen to believe, why is there no reference to the church from the end of Revelation chapter three to the mention of the bride (the church) in chapter 19? It would seem to me that if the church is not already removed there would be some mention of the church's activities during the Tribulation period. It would not be in story form as in the *Left Behind* series. Even Dr. LaHaye calls those people left behind the Trib Force and not the church.

The Great Rebellion

As we went through our discussion on the removal of the true church we saw the statement made by Christ in Matthew 24:10-14, *"And then many will be offended, will betray one another, and will hate one another. Then many false prophets will rise up and deceive many. And because lawlessness will abound, the love of many will grow cold. But he who endures to the end shall be saved. And this gospel of the kingdom will be preached in all the world as a witness to all the nations, and then the end will come.* Actually, there are other verses that illustrate what Christ meant by saying, *then many will be offended, will betray one another, and will hate one another.* Look in Mark 13:12, *"Now brother will betray brother to death, and a father his child; and children will rise up against parents and cause them to be put to death."*

The confirmation statement is made in Luke 21:16, *"You will be betrayed even by parents and brothers, relatives and friends; and they will put some of you to death."* Luke 12:49-53, *"I came to send fire on the earth, and how I wish it were already kindled! But I have a baptism to be baptized with, and how distressed I am till it is accomplished! Do you suppose that I came to give peace on earth? I tell you, not at all, but rather division. For from now on five in one house will be divided: three against two, and two against three. Father will be divided against son and son against father, mother against daughter and daughter against mother, mother-in-law against her daughter-in-law and daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law."* Take any red letter edition and notice that all these statements are red letter, or made by Christ himself. The illustration of the coming rebellion is not in my words, they are Christ's words. I'm only writing this out so you have the opportunity to see what I have already been shown.

However, I will now attempt to state why there is such a rebellion. Be it that you have read Revelation, or the books of the *Left Behind* series, either way you will run into two distinct but very different marks. The believers will be sealed with the mark of God in their foreheads. Revelation 7:3 NIV, *"Do not harm the land or the sea or the trees until we put a seal on the foreheads of the servants of our God."* The unbelievers will wear the mark of the Antichrist on their right hand or in their forehead. Revelation 13:16-18, *He causes all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and slave, to receive a mark on their right hand or on their foreheads, and that no one may buy or sell except one who has the mark or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. Here is wisdom. Let him who has understanding calculate the number of the beast, for it is the number of a man: His number is 666.*

I'm going to ask a very simple question and there will be some who will say I threw out a curve ball. Why is it the stories that are told about these two marks always seem to imply that they are on the outside of the forehead? Look back at the first portion of this book. It may have been a study of cause and effect but it still gave the location for mankind's spirit and soul. A man's soul is his conscious mind and his heart or spirit is his subconscious mind? If you accept a belief you take it into yourself. You store that belief in your spirit. You act upon this belief, live with this belief and even defend this belief.

It is in your forehead, only difference is that we are talking about it being on the inside (mind, brain) and not the outside of your forehead.

Wouldn't it make sense that either mark is your belief? You either believe God's Word or you believe Satan's lies and deceptions. Now you have the truth of why brother will go against brother and parents against their children. If one is of one belief and the other is of another belief there is going to be conflict, and even death. If you don't believe this to be so and that there will be more believers than nonbelievers you haven't read much of Revelation. The mark of the beast is illustrated in Revelation 13:16, *He causes all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and slave, to receive a mark on their right hand or on their foreheads.* Now go back and look to see how many unbelievers there will be worshiping the beast. Revelation 13:8, *All who dwell on the earth will worship him, whose names have not been written in the Book of Life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.* Oh! Just so there is no question about the right hand, or left hand if you are so gifted, how do you hold a book, a sign, a pamphlet, or anything about your belief when you look at it or even show it to someone else? Preachers even hold the Bible up in the air, from the pulpit, when they are trying to make a point.

There are two marks identified. Which one will you wear if you have to go through the Tribulation? Remember what Jesus said! Matthew 5:17, *"Do not think that I came to destroy the Law or the Prophets. I did not come to destroy but to fulfill."*

Full Circle (Completion)

Another thing brought up in our comparison between the flood event and the Tribulation was how some things in the beginning are in the end and some things of the end are in the beginning.

I'm going to make a slight detour and take you through a very deep spiritual study. What I am about to show you will not be in your Sunday School lessons. In fact I will probably be called some harsh names by doing this. Please, do this for me, pray right now that God will open your mind, take away your traditions and show you truth. If you do that, read this, study this and the Holy Spirit then tells you I'm the one who is wrong and a very old fool, it will be me who will face a certain punishment and not you. Is that fair enough? Please, say your prayer as your part in the preparation for this study.

Okay, here goes! Genesis, the beginning. So many things are shown to mankind through this first book of the Bible. There are some easy truths stated, i.e., the fish and birds were created on the fifth day. Animals and man were created on the sixth day. Please notice that in Genesis 1:24, *Then God said, "Let the earth bring forth the living creature according to its kind: cattle and creeping thing and beast of the earth, each according to its kind;" and it was so.* Creeping creatures and those that move along the ground were created on the sixth day. The end of verse 25 says this was good. Genesis 1:25, *And God made the beast of the earth according to its kind, cattle according to its kind, and everything that creeps on the earth according to its kind. And God saw that it was good.* Wouldn't that also mean that a snake was good, for doesn't the snake move along the ground? Fascinating! God made everything for a purpose. God prepared the earth as a paradise with no sin and all things were good. Man's placement in the Garden was also good. Another question comes to mind: what was man's food at that time? Look at Genesis 2:16-17, *And the Lord God commanded the man, saying, "Of every tree of the garden you may freely eat; but of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat, for in the day that you eat of it you shall surely die."* It appears that man's food at that time consisted of nuts, berries and fruit. We all know that sin was introduced in the garden and God expelled the man and his wife from the garden.

Okay, let's go a little further. How many trees were at the center of the garden? Genesis 2:9, *And out of the ground the LORD God made every tree grow that is pleasant to the sight and good for*

food. *The tree of life was also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of the knowledge of good and evil.* What was the command given to the male about these two trees? Genesis 2:16-17, *And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, "Of every tree of the garden you may freely eat; but of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat, for in the day that you eat of it you shall surely die."* Interesting?

A little further we see that the female listens to the serpent (Satan) and takes of the tree, followed thereafter by the male. We now run into an eye opening verse. Look at Genesis 3:7, *Then the eyes of both of them were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves coverings.* Here we have the beginning of the problem. Every since the original sin, mankind has thought they could correct or solve the problem. These two realized they were naked and worked to sew fig leaves together to make coverings for themselves. If we go over to Revelation we see example after example of mankind thinking they can buy a solution, send someone else to fix it, or if everything else doesn't work kill the ones causing their perceived problem. The full circle is there and the only real solution is belief in Christ.

Reading the scripture to this point we understand that Christ and Satan were in the garden with the male and the female. Have you thought it strange that I haven't called the male and the female Adam and Eve? Truth is, they were both called Adam at this point in the story. Look at Genesis 3:20, *And Adam called his wife's name Eve, because she was the mother of all living.* We've only studied down to verse 7, not to 20 where the female was named Eve. Thus, at this point they were both Adam, meaning mankind. Need confirmation? Go back and look at Genesis 2:27-28, *So God created man in His own image; in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them. Then God blessed them, and God said to them, "Be fruitful and multiply; fill the earth and subdue it; have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over every living thing that moves on the earth."* Notice it said both male and female were created. Doesn't it also say them? Them is plural and means more than one. Them is the objective case while the subjective case is they or those (also plural). Actually, we will see a direct confirmation just a little further on in our study.

Scripture confirms that Christ and Satan were both in the garden. They were the two trees at the center of the garden. Christ is the tree of Life. Satan is the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. I said it would be hard and that is why I asked you to pray. Now watch! Look at Revelation. We can find this phrase used three times in Revelation. Revelation 2:7, *"He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To him who overcomes I will give to eat from the tree of life, which is in the midst of the Paradise of God."* Revelation 22:2, *In the middle of its street, and on either side of the river, was the tree of life, which bore twelve fruits, each tree yielding its fruit every month. The leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations.* Revelation 22:14, *Blessed are those who do His commandments, that they may have the right to the tree of life, and may enter through the gates into the city.*

Look closely at verse 2:7. Who is in the midst of the paradise of God? It's Christ! John is the writer of these words from Christ. Did John record anything else about Christ that says the same thing? You be the judge. Look one more time at John 1:1, *In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.* Now look at John 6:27, *"Do not work for food that spoils, but for food that endures to eternal life, which the Son of Man will give you. On him God the Father has placed his seal of approval."* Christ said there was a food that endures to eternal life and that He, the Son of Man, gives it! So you tell me who is the tree of life? Notice something else in Genesis 2:16-17 *And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, "Of every tree of the garden you may freely eat; but of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat, for in the day that you eat of it you shall surely die."* God instructed the male that he could eat of any tree in the garden except the tree of the knowledge of good and evil.

Now, let's see if Satan is the other tree. Notice how the identification is made concerning this tree, the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. Who was it that desired to place himself above God, went against God's will and thus became evil? It was Lucifer! The angel that covered the throne of God. The angel Lucifer possessed the knowledge of good, and when he went against God's will, becoming both Satan and devil, he, and he alone, also possessed the knowledge of evil!

Both Christ and Satan were in the garden! Satan opened his mouth and made his lies and deception to the female while Christ kept his mouth shut, just as he did at His trials before the crucifixion. However, let us not forget that Adam, both the male and the female, could have taken from the tree of life. Alas, we must also realize that once they took of the other tree God could not let them take of the tree of life. Therefore, they were banished from the garden and the guard was stationed in front of the tree of life. Until God's plan of Salvation was put together to redeem mankind, by the sacrifice of His son, mankind could no longer reach the tree of life. Once Christ died for the original sin, through Him, and Him alone, mankind could once again possess a route to get to the tree of life.

The Seed

I must once again give you a warning concerning what you are about to read. You have said your prayer to prepare you for what is being studied.

In this discussion please note that we are going to study and find out what the original sin really was. No it was not eating an apple! Yes, it has something to do with the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. My spirit says the best way to do this is to go backward from our starting point. So, turn over to Genesis chapter 5 and we will go through the first three verses. Genesis 5:1-3 KJV, *This is the book of the generations of Adam. In the day that God created man, in the likeness of God made he him; male and female created he them; and blessed them, and called their name Adam, in the day they were created. And Adam lived an hundred and thirty years, and begot a son in his own likeness, after his image; and called his name Seth.* First things first, look at verse two. Is there any question that the male and female were both called Adam up to the point in Genesis 3:20 where the male named the female Eve?

Here's my serious question for this discussion. In verse three it says that Adam begot a son in his own likeness, after his image; and called his name Seth. Why aren't Cain and Abel mentioned? Before I give you the answer I would like for you to think about this question. If you were asked to provide an answer to the question above, could you? Will you back up your answer with scripture to show your point?

Let's start working backward! I will be using the King James for this part of our discussion. Notice in verse 4:25 two things: (1) *Adam knew his wife again*; and, (2) *appointed another seed for me instead of Abel, whom Cain killed.* Genesis 4:25, *And Adam knew his wife again, and she bore a son and named him Seth, "For God has appointed another seed for me instead of Abel, whom Cain killed."*

The genealogy of Cain: Genesis 4:17-24, *And Cain knew his wife, and she conceived and bore Enoch. And he built a city, and called the name of the city after the name of his son; Enoch. To Enoch was born Irad; and Irad begot Mehujael, and Mehujael begot Methushael, and Methushael begot Lamech. Then Lamech took for himself two wives: the name of one was Adah, and the name of the second was Zillah. And Adah bore Jabal. He was the father of those who dwell in tents and have livestock. His brother's name was Jubal. He was the father of all those who play the harp and flute. And as for Zillah, she also bore Tubal-Cain, an instructor of every craftsman in bronze and iron. And the sister of Tubal-Cain was Naamah. Then Lamech said to his wives: "Adah and Zillah, hear my voice; Wives of Lamech, listen to my speech! For I have killed a man for wounding me, Even a young man for*

hurting me. If Cain shall be avenged sevenfold, Then Lamech seventy-sevenfold.”

The story of Cain and Abel: Genesis 4:3-8, *And in the process of time it came to pass that Cain brought an offering of the fruit of the ground to the LORD. Abel also brought of the firstborn of his flock and of their fat. And the LORD respected Abel and his offering, but He did not respect Cain and his offering. And Cain was very angry, and his countenance fell. So the LORD said to Cain, “Why are you angry? And why has your countenance fallen? If you do well, will you not be accepted? And if you do not do well, sin lies at the door. And its desire is for you, but you should rule over it.”* Now Cain talked with Abel his brother; and it came to pass, when they were in the field, that Cain rose up against Abel his brother and killed him.

The birth of Cain and Abel. Genesis 4:1-2, *Now Adam knew Eve his wife, and she conceived and bore Cain, and said, “I have acquired a man from the LORD.”* Then she bore again, this time his brother Abel. Now Abel was a keeper of sheep, but Cain was a tiller of the ground. Notice that Adam knew Eve in verse 1 and Cain was born. In verse 2 we see that Abel was born.

Now we really start into some very deep statements. We are going to go backward through chapter 3. We have basically covered verses 22-24 and need not go over them again. In verse 21 we see God making clothes of skin for Adam and Eve. Genesis 3:21, *Also for Adam and his wife the LORD God made tunics of skin, and clothed them.* In verse 20 we see the female being named Eve. Verses 17-19 we learn of the curse placed upon the male for breaking God’s command Genesis 3:17-19, *Then to Adam He said, “Because you have heeded the voice of your wife, and have eaten from the tree of which I commanded you, saying, ‘You shall not eat of it.’ Cursed is the ground for your sake; in toil you shall eat of it all the days of your life. Both thorns and thistles it shall bring forth for you, and you shall eat the herb of the field. In the sweat of your face you shall eat bread till you return to the ground, for out of it you were taken; for dust you are, and to dust you shall return.”*

This brings us back to verse 16 and we find the curse placed upon the woman. Genesis 3:16, *To the woman He said: “I will greatly multiply your sorrow and your conception; in pain you shall bring forth children; your desire shall be for your husband, and he shall rule over you.”* Notice the peculiar statement God made about the woman’s desire and that the husband was to rule over her.

Now for the curse upon the serpent. Genesis 3:14-15, *So the LORD God said to the serpent: “Because you have done this, you are cursed more than all cattle, and more than every beast of the field; on your belly you shall go, and you shall eat dust all the days of your life. And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your seed and her Seed; He shall bruise your head, and you shall bruise His heel.”*

Verse 14 is the curse upon the serpent. But what is this in verse 15 about the serpent’s seed and her Seed? In verse 13 we have the answer to all of this. Genesis 3:13, *And the LORD God said unto the woman, “What is this that thou hast done?”*

And the woman said, “The serpent beguiled me, and I did eat.” The serpent beguiled her!

Okay, we’ve come backward and there doesn’t seem to be any order to these verses or the information that I have given. Some people would even read this and say, so what? There are those people who will also tell me that if it is not clearly stated in plain English that the things I made statements toward are just not true. Here’s the answer to the last two statements. God has permitted some people to be blinded because of their own disbelief and they will not see the truth no matter how you present it to them. 2 Corinthians 4:3-4, *But even if our gospel is veiled, it is veiled to those who are perishing, whose minds the god of this age has blinded, who do not believe, lest the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine on them.*

It’s time to turn this around and look at it in the manner it was written. This time we start in Genesis 3:13, *And the LORD God said unto the woman, “What is this that thou hast done?”*

And the woman said, “The serpent beguiled me, and I did eat.” What is this word beguiled?

Hey! Don't run over to your dictionary to see what it says, it won't help. Why is it so difficult for English speaking people to understand that all words and phrases of Hebrew and Greek will not translate directly to an English word. To understand this word beguiled you have to view it in the original Hebrew and not in English.

Let me give you two examples before we continue. Do you remember the discussion on how to determine the birthdate of Christ? We went through the process of making it simple by throwing out all the other calendars except the Jewish calendar, as illustrated in the Bible! Secondly, look at the word love. If you go to Strong's Concordance you can find 8 different Hebrew words that translate to love and there are 7 different words in the Greek. That only tells me that there are different expressions of love in both Hebrew and Greek than in English, but the only word we have to translate to is love. Thus, you cannot have a direct translation for some things. I hope you understand this for it truly is the simple means to understanding the Bible. When doing Bible study view it as it was written, spoken or taught in either the original Hebrew or in Greek, and not in the translated English.

With that said, look at Strong's for the word beguiled. I can find 3 different root words in Hebrew and one in Greek. Even so there is only one usage for Hebrew 5377 and that is in Genesis 3:13. I have to accept that this is the only meaning which counts, all others convey a misleading message. So what does the definition for 5377 say?

5377 nâshâ', naw-shaw'; a prim. root; to lead astray, i.e. (mentally) to delude, or (morally) to seduce:—beguile, deceive, X greatly, X utterly.

Because of translations in the NIV and NKJV many have taken the meaning to be that Eve was deceived. Alas, that won't work! Look at the curse put upon the serpent in Genesis 3:14-15 (NKJV), *So the LORD God said to the serpent: "Because you have done this, you are cursed more than all cattle, and more than every beast of the field; on your belly you shall go, and you shall eat dust all the days of your life. And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your seed and her Seed; He shall bruise your head, and you shall bruise His heel."*

Answer this: how did you get two different seeds from being deceived? Okay! Now answer this: what is the seed of man? You mean you still don't get it? Then look again at the meaning of the Hebrew word for beguiled. It means to seduce X (that means times, like in multiplication) greatly, X utterly. So the serpent utterly seduced Eve. Now, how do you utterly seduce someone of the opposite sex? Please, do not run off and stick your head in the sand. This is the original sin! Satan used his smooth talk and told Eve how good it would be. And, up to that point the male and female had not done this, even though they were told by God they could. Oh! I see! You missed that part also. Okay, turn back to Genesis 1:28, *Then God blessed them, and God said to them, "Be fruitful and multiply; fill the earth and subdue it; have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over every living thing that moves on the earth."* God blessed the male and the female and told them to multiply. Well, I don't know about you, but I only know of one natural way for a male and a female to have the capability to multiply, or create another in their image. One other thing we must remember. In many places in the Bible we are first given an overview and then we get the specifics to fill in that overview.

So, here is what happened. Satan told Eve sex was good and showed her as Adam watched (remember Adam was also there in verse 6) and then Adam did likewise. Yes! Satan deceived them both, lied to them both and introduced sexual immorality to mankind. It is the reason for the various statements made in Genesis chapters 3 through 5, the reason for the flood event, the reason for many of the illustrations of the Old Testament and the warning of what to look at concerning Noah and Lot in order to understand the time and situation for the Second Coming of Christ.

I know that some of you read this and swallowed your false teeth, others threw this book across the room, but some of you are still reading and I'll show you, as Paul Harvey says, "The rest of the story."

Perhaps the above explains why verse 15 is written in the manner it is: that God would put enmity between Satan's seed and the female's seed. Here, once again we see a look forward with the fill in to follow. The immediate result is that there are two seeds, one good and one evil. The fill in is the statements in chapter 4 with verse one saying Adam knew Eve his wife with the birth of Cain (Satan's seed) and verse 2 birth of Abel (her seed). Now you can further fill this in with the prophecy of Anti-christ (Satan's seed) and Christ (Adam's seed) with the word picture illustration of the bruising of head and heel. There is a point of confirmation in the Bible concerning Cain being the seed of Satan. 1 John 3:12 NIV, *Do not be like Cain, who belonged to the evil one and murdered his brother.*

Still don't believe all of this? Want more proof? We asked the question about verse 15 concerning the difference between Satan's seed and Eve's seed. Let's look at the curse upon the female in verse 16. *To the woman He said: "I will greatly multiply your sorrow and your conception; in pain you shall bring forth children; your desire shall be for your husband, and he shall rule over you."* First, God said: *I will greatly multiply your sorrow and your conception; in pain you shall bring forth children.* How did conception or children come into this picture if the sin was the eating of an apple? Secondly, why would it be necessary for God to issue a statement to the female that: *"Your desire shall be for your husband, and he shall rule over you."* No! That is not issued as an order of dominance. It is the shocked proclamation of a Father to an offspring. It seems to me God is saying: "Your desire (lust) shall be to your mate and not the fellow who deceived you into believing this lie, and you will follow your mate's lead in teaching because I told it to him directly." To go further why would it be necessary to add "... Eve his wife" in verse 4:1? Genesis 4:1, *Now Adam knew Eve his wife, and she conceived and bore Cain, and said, "I have acquired a man from the LORD."* Who else could Adam carnally know if Eve was the only woman around?

Let's move on. In verse 7 we see the male and the female trying to solve their own perceived problem by making coverings for themselves. Look at Genesis 3:21 to see the answer to this and the reason why Cain's offering was rejected and Abel's accepted. Genesis 3:21, *Also for Adam and his wife the Lord God made tunics of skin, and clothed them.* It was God who made tunics of skin to cover them. But, where is the reason one offering was rejected and the other accepted. It's in one word skin. How do you get animal skin? The animal doesn't unbutton it, take it off, and give it to you. The animal has to die to give up its skin. There's a blood sacrifice involved because the animal's skin is what keeps the blood inside. Once the skin is removed the animal cannot keep the blood in and therefore dies. That's a harsh statement! I'm sure God killed the animal prior to taking off the skin. The fact remains, the animal died to give up its skin. I'll show you the last part of the answer in a moment.

Now, let's look more closely at the fill in details of chapter 4:1-2, *Now Adam knew Eve his wife, and she conceived and bore Cain, and said, "I have acquired a man from the LORD." Then she bore again, this time his brother Abel. Now Abel was a keeper of sheep, but Cain was a tiller of the ground.* Look ahead to verse 25, *And Adam knew his wife again, and she bore a son and named him Seth, "For God has appointed another seed for me instead of Abel, whom Cain killed."* In verses 1 and 25 we have Adam knowing Eve twice and yet three sons are born. Accept it or not Cain and Abel are the first set of twins, one is Satan's seed (Cain) and one is Eve's seed (Abel). You still don't believe this? Okay, look at the forward statements. Why is there a genealogy for Cain in chapter 4 and a genealogy for Adam in chapter 5. If we are talking about only one lineage you only need one genealogy. However, if you are talking about two lineages you need two different genealogies.

Now, let's answer the question about the offering made in Genesis 4:3-5, *And in the process of time it came to pass that Cain brought an offering of the fruit of the ground to the LORD. Abel also*

brought of the firstborn of his flock and of their fat. And the LORD respected Abel and his offering, but He did not respect Cain and his offering. And Cain was very angry, and his countenance fell. Notice who brings their offering first. It is Cain! Isn't this just like Satan's normal deceptions? Satan knows the truth but wants it to be his way, and not God's way. There is always a small portion of truth in all creative deceptions and lies. Let's explain the difference between the offerings of Cain and Abel. Cain brought the best the ground could offer. It may have been flowers, or fruit, or grains, or even nuts and berries, or maybe all of these in a collective basket. Abel must have said, "Oops!" and remembered to take an offering. He took an offering of the firstborn and of their fat.

The answer to why Abel's offering was accepted was given. It goes back as a detail in Genesis 3:21. God made the tunics from skins and Abel understood the sacrifice that God made for his mother and father to have clothing. Adam surely told this story to both boys and told them to take an offering to God. Even though Cain made his offering first it did not require a sacrifice, but Abel's did. Oh! You didn't see that. It said in describing Abel's offering "*. . . and of their fat.*" We went through how you get skins of animals, explain how you get their fat? Yes! I know that we are an overweight society and many would gladly give up their fat. How can this be done without some amount of blood loss? Even liposuction involves the taking of some blood. You see, the simple truth is that Abel's offering honored the sacrifice God made in Genesis 3:21 because an animal gave its life for the skin. Abel's offering was also the fat of the firstborn, thus, some of the firstborn had to die to get their fat.

Now, let's delve into the two different seeds. There are two different genealogies given because there are two seeds identified. So we see the beginning of the genealogy of Cain (Satan's seed) here in chapter 4 and the beginning of Adam's seed in chapter 5. We have Eve's seed removed and no longer mentioned because Cain killed Abel (Eve's seed). To everyone who still doesn't want to accept the birth of twins (one good—Abel, and one evil—Cain) look further at the genealogy of Cain. We all know, without a question, that Cain was the first murderer; but, what about this evil intent and the second murderer and even the possibility of the third killing.

Look at Genesis 4:16-24, *Then Cain went out from the presence of the LORD and dwelt in the land of Nod on the east of Eden. And Cain knew his wife, and she conceived and bore Enoch. And he built a city, and called the name of the city after the name of his son; Enoch. To Enoch was born Irad; and Irad begot Mehujael, and Mehujael begot Methushael, and Methushael begot Lamech. Then Lamech took for himself two wives: the name of one was Adah, and the name of the second was Zillah. And Adah bore Jubal. He was the father of those who dwell in tents and have livestock. His brother's name was Jubal. He was the father of all those who play the harp and flute. And as for Zillah, she also bore Tubal-Cain, an instructor of every craftsman in bronze and iron. And the sister of Tubal-Cain was Naamah. Then Lamech said to his wives: "Adah and Zillah, hear my voice; wives of Lamech, listen to my speech! For I have killed a man for wounding me, even a young man for hurting me. If Cain shall be avenged sevenfold, then Lamech seventy-sevenfold."*

Right at the beginning we see that Cain leaves the presence of God and moves to Nod. There were at least two lands at this time because we are told so. One is named Nod and the other is Eden. The special place within Eden was the location of the garden. Anyway, look at verse 19, *Then Lamech took for himself two wives: the name of one was Adah, and the name of the second was Zillah.* This verse gives us more explanation of the ungodly seed. Notice in Genesis 2:24-25, *Therefore a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and they shall become one flesh. And they were both naked, the man and his wife, and were not ashamed.* God's intent is only one wife. Look at the emphasis in 4:25, *And Adam knew his wife again, and she bore a son and named him Seth, "For God has appointed another seed for me instead of Abel, whom Cain killed."* But, here in 4:19 we see Lamech taking two wives. *Then Lamech took for himself two wives: the name of one was Adah, and the name of the second was Zillah.*

In fact if we really look at this Lamech guy he was one bad apple. This looks to be the sixth generation from Satan: (1) Cain; (2) Enoch; (3) Irad; (4) Mehujael; (5) Methushael; and (6) Lamech. If we compare this with Adam's lineage we have: (1) Seth; (2) Enosh; (3) Cainan; (4) Mahalalel; (5) Jared; and, (6) **Enoch**. Now, there has to be an intermixing of this good blood—evil blood prior to Noah and the flood. Notice in these names that there is only one that we have previously spoken of: namely **Enoch**, sixth generation from Adam, who walked with God. Maybe Enoch is the counter balance toward good and Lamech was the example of bad or that Enoch saw how bad this Lamech really was and it scared him enough to walk with God. Whatever the reason, my statement is based on: (1) Genesis 4:17, *And Cain knew his wife, and she conceived and bore Enoch. And he built a city, and called the name of the city after the name of his son; Enoch;* (2) Genesis 5:6, *Seth lived one hundred and five years, and begot Enosh;* and, (3) Genesis 5:4, *After he begot Seth, the days of Adam were eight hundred years; and he had sons and daughters.* My question at this point is: from where did Cain and Seth get wives? There are two ways the question can be answered. The first manner of answering the question would be considered the more traditional view and the answer is considered to be in verse 5:4 with the two words . . . *and daughters.*

There is another view that can be taken to answer the question just posed. Let's look once again at some of the statements made in Genesis chapter one and two. In chapter one we find the statement made by God in verses 26-30, *Then God said, "Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over the cattle, over all the earth and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth." So God created man in His own image; in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them. Then God blessed them, and God said to them, "Be fruitful and multiply; fill the earth and subdue it; have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over every living thing that moves on the earth." And God said, "See, I have given you every herb that yields seed which is on the face of all the earth, and every tree whose fruit yields seed; to you it shall be for food. Also, to every beast of the earth, to every bird of the air, and to everything that creeps on the earth, in which there is life, I have given every green herb for food"; and it was so.* In these verses we can see the Godhead Trinity in the use of the word *Us*. However, the one word I really want you to view is in the clause *male and female He created them*. Take special notice that this was done on the sixth day. We should all know that God rested on the seventh day and made it holy.

Now turn over to chapter two and read with me the following verses: Genesis 2:7-9, *And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living being. The Lord God planted a garden eastward in Eden, and there He put the man whom He had formed. And out of the ground the Lord God made every tree grow that is pleasant to the sight and good for food. The tree of life was also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of the knowledge of good and evil.*

Here is the other viewpoint. Notice that God did not create the man who was placed in the garden, instead this man was formed. Even Paul seemed to have understood this because of what he wrote in 1 Timothy 2:13, *For Adam was formed first, then Eve.* We can also find a different situation pertaining to the food for the *male and female*, the *them* of chapter one. *I have given you every herb that yields seed which is on the face of all the earth, and every tree whose fruit yields seed; to you it shall be for food.* To the man placed in the garden we have the following statement made: *God made every tree grow that is pleasant to the sight and good for food.* It appears that there are two situations. First, there is the sixth day creation of the general population of males and females (*them*) and the placing of this general population upon the earth. The second situation is the eighth day forming of the man and the placing of the man in the garden.

Surely, this must be the more appropriate answer for the question of where did Cain and Seth find a wife? Both Cain and Seth would be able to have a wife who would not be their sister by selecting a female of the general population. There are several reasons that I state the answer in this manner. Not only would there be females available in the general population there would be no violation of God's own laws. We must remember that the Bible is not a history of the entire world, it is a history of God's people. The Bible provides to us a written record of the trials and tribulations of the Hebrew people and incorporates the original sin and the means to overcome the sin nature through Jesus, the Christ. If the traditional view is accepted as being correct we make God out as a liar. Consider Leviticus 18 and what it says. If Cain and Seth took a wife from the daughters of Adam they violate God's own words in Leviticus 18 for God says no one is to uncover the nakedness of anyone of near kin to do so is an abomination. Therefore, uncovering the nakedness of kin is to have illicit sexual relations.

If we can be easily swayed from the truth and caused to accept a false answer to so many Bible questions it should not be difficult to see why chapter 6 deals with the wickedness of mankind. But, that gets us away from what we are discussing. Look very seriously at Genesis 4:23, *Then Lamech said to his wives: "Adah and Zillah, hear my voice; wives of Lamech, listen to my speech! For I have killed a man for wounding me, even a young man for hurting me.* Doesn't it say that Lamech *killed a man for wounding me, even a young man for hurting me?* So we now have the second murderer. Is this only describing one man or is this two men? One wounded him, and one hurt him. Are these one and the same or two different men? In either case we have identified rage, anger and revenge all in this act. This surely, was a violent man, a vengeful man and a man easily set off with rage and anger. Today we can see the same thing and we may call the person a redneck, and the act road rage. Yet, we don't see Satan behind either the person or the act. Once again, the simple truth is that the seed of Satan has been passed from generation to generation, existed at the time of Christ, exists today, and will exist when the man of lawlessness comes.

Route to God

Does the path you're traveling
lead you to my house?
—God

The stories of the Old Testament, the prophecies of the prophets, and even the 400 years of silence prior to the New Testament all lead toward the fulfilling of the prophecy stated in Genesis 3:15, *And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your seed and her Seed; He shall bruise your head, and you shall bruise His heel.* God's redemption of mankind is through the sacrifice of the shedding of blood upon the tree by Christ, God's son. God, Himself, caused the first sacrifice. Genesis 3:21, *Also for Adam and his wife the LORD God made tunics of skin, and clothed them.* God provided mankind a solution to their problem. God, Himself, provides the only acceptable sacrifice to resolve mankind's sin problem.

Even so, there seems to be many answers given by mankind about how mankind is to reach God. Information provided to me indicates there are four prevailing thoughts on how mankind gets to Heaven and enters the presence of God. These four thoughts are: (1) exclusive; (2) inclusive; (3) pluralistic; and (4) universal.

The exclusive thought says there is only one way to get to Heaven and to God. That's through Christ! Christianity is the only religion where an exclusive statement is recorded. John 14:6, *Jesus said to him, "I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me.* The confirmation statement is in Acts 4:12, *"Nor is there salvation in any other; for there is no other name under heaven given among men by which we must be saved."*

Paul took this one step further in his letter to the Galatians 1:6-9, *I marvel that you are turning away so soon from Him who called you in the grace of Christ, to a different gospel, which is not another; but there are some who trouble you and want to pervert the gospel of Christ. But even if we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel to you than what we have preached to you, let him be accursed. As we have said before, so now I say again, if anyone preaches any other gospel to you than what you have received, let him be accursed.* This is an express one way street. All traffic lights are synchronized to change in a timed sequence so you do not have to stop. There are no railroad crossings that might cause you to stop, in fact there is nothing in the way that would prevent you from getting to your final destination.

You also have other distortions in thought. The inclusive thought says you can be a Buddhist, a Hindu, a Moslem or any other religion and if you do good works then when you get to the entrance of Heaven, Christ, the High Priest, steps forward. He says something like, "Father this person is a good person and I know them, so please permit them to enter."

Not so! Let's go to the red letter edition once again and look at three verses: Matthew 7:23, *"And then I will declare to them, 'I never knew you; depart from Me, you who practice lawlessness!'"* Matthew 25:41, *Then He will also say to those on the left hand, "Depart from Me, you cursed, into the everlasting fire prepared for the devil and his angels."* Luke 13:27, *But He will say, "I tell you I do not know you, where you are from. Depart from Me, all you workers of iniquity."* Notice that all three verses are red letter; thus, statements made directly by Christ. Notice in all three statements the phrase, *". . . depart from me."* If the inclusive theory is going to be acceptable, it seems God forgot to tell Christ.

We also find the pluralist theory where there are many ways to get to Heaven. It could be a good Buddhist, a good Moslem, a good Hindu, a good witch, and even someone who believes in a magic rock. Not this way either! Refer back to the same verses as above. Add Revelation 6:15-16, *And the kings of the earth, the great men, the rich men, the commanders, the mighty men, every slave and every free man, hid themselves in the caves and in the rocks of the mountains, and said to the mountains and rocks, "Fall on us and hide us from the face of Him who sits on the throne and from the wrath of the Lamb!"* It seems that those going through the Tribulation period will be crying to their magic rock to hide them from God. Perhaps instead they should be striving to be with the Lord.

Finally, we have the thought of the universalist who says that everyone will go to Heaven, and there is no Hell. Talk about somebody who didn't read the book (Bible). There's just no reasoning, explanation, or teaching that's going to reach these folks.

Alas, even in these four theories there are those folks who strongly oppose a righteous and just God. They make statements such as: A loving God would not send anyone to Hell, especially anyone who had not heard the Gospel message of Christ. Well, I hate to break it to them but unfortunately that is exactly what God is going to do. Let's go and find the scriptures that tell us this. We'll begin with Psalms 19:1-14, *The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament shows His handiwork. Day unto day utters speech, and night unto night reveals knowledge. There is no speech nor language where their voice is not heard. Their line has gone out through all the earth, and their words to the end of the world.*

In them He has set a tabernacle for the sun, which is like a bridegroom coming out of his chamber, and rejoices like a strong man to run its race. Its rising is from one end of heaven, and its

circuit to the other end; and there is nothing hidden from its heat.

The law of the LORD is perfect, converting the soul; the testimony of the LORD is sure, making wise the simple; the statutes of the LORD are right, rejoicing the heart; the commandment of the LORD is pure, enlightening the eyes; the fear of the LORD is clean, enduring forever; the judgments of the LORD are true and righteous altogether. More to be desired are they than gold, yea, than much fine gold; sweeter also than honey and the honeycomb. Moreover by them Your servant is warned, and in keeping them there is great reward. God does give warning to His own and His own should take His warnings seriously.

Who can understand his errors? Cleanse me from secret faults. Keep back Your servant also from presumptuous sins; let them not have dominion over me. Then I shall be blameless, and I shall be innocent of great transgression. These are an individual's personal errors and transgressions. Let the words of my mouth and the meditation of my heart be acceptable in Your sight, O LORD, my strength and my Redeemer.

Acts 14:17, "Nevertheless He did not leave Himself without witness, in that He did good, gave us rain from heaven and fruitful seasons, filling our hearts with food and gladness."

Romans 1:18-25, For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who suppress the truth in unrighteousness, because what may be known of God is manifest in them, for God has shown it to them. For since the creation of the world His invisible attributes are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead, so that they are without excuse, because, although they knew God, they did not glorify Him as God, nor were thankful, but became futile in their thoughts, and their foolish hearts were darkened. Seems rather straightforward to me God will not bless the unrighteousness of men.

Professing to be wise, they became fools, and changed the glory of the incorruptible God into an image made like corruptible man; and birds and four-footed animals and creeping things.

Therefore God also gave them up to uncleanness, in the lusts of their hearts, to dishonor their bodies among themselves, who exchanged the truth of God for the lie, and worshiped and served the creature rather than the Creator, who is blessed forever. Amen.

Romans 1:28-32, And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a debased mind, to do those things which are not fitting; (look at this list of what is not fitting) being filled with all unrighteousness, sexual immorality, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, strife, deceit, evil-mindedness; they are whisperers, backbiters, haters of God, violent, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, undiscerning, untrustworthy, unloving, unforgiving, unmerciful; who, knowing the righteous judgment of God, that those who practice such things are deserving of death, not only do the same but also approve of those who practice them.

Romans 2:1-16, Therefore you are inexcusable, O man, whoever you are who judge, for in whatever you judge another you condemn yourself; for you who judge practice the same things. But we know that the judgment of God is according to truth against those who practice such things. And do you think this, O man, you who judge those practicing such things, and doing the same, that you will escape the judgment of God? Or do you despise the riches of His goodness, forbearance, and longsuffering, not knowing that the goodness of God leads you to repentance?

But in accordance with your hardness and your impenitent heart you are treasuring up for yourself wrath in the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God, who "will render to each one according to his deeds": eternal life to those who by patient continuance in doing good seek for glory, honor, and immortality; but to those who are self-seeking and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness; indignation and wrath, tribulation and anguish, on every soul of man who does evil, of the Jew first and also of the Greek; but glory, honor, and peace to everyone who works what is good, to the Jew first and also to the Greek. For there is no partiality with God.

For as many as have sinned without law will also perish without law, and as many as have sinned in the law will be judged by the law (for not the hearers of the law are just in the sight of God, but the doers of the law will be justified; for when Gentiles, who do not have the law, by nature do the things in the law, these, although not having the law, are a law to themselves, who show the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness, and between themselves their thoughts accusing or else excusing them) in the day when God will judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ, according to my gospel.

Romans 3:21-26, But now the righteousness of God apart from the law is revealed, being witnessed by the Law and the Prophets, even the righteousness of God, through faith in Jesus Christ, to all and on all who believe. For there is no difference; for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, being justified freely by His grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus, whom God set forth as a propitiation by His blood, through faith, to demonstrate His righteousness, because in His forbearance God had passed over the sins that were previously committed, to demonstrate at the present time His righteousness, that He might be just and the justifier of the one who has faith in Jesus.

Romans 4:1-24, What then shall we say that Abraham our father has found according to the flesh? For if Abraham was justified by works, he has something to boast about, but not before God. For what does the Scripture say? “Abraham believed God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness.” Now to him who works, the wages are not counted as grace but as debt.

But to him who does not work but believes on Him who justifies the ungodly, his faith is accounted for righteousness, just as David also describes the blessedness of the man to whom God imputes righteousness apart from works: “Blessed are those whose lawless deeds are forgiven, and whose sins are covered; blessed is the man to whom the LORD shall not impute sin.”

Does this blessedness then come upon the circumcised only, or upon the uncircumcised also? For we say that faith was accounted to Abraham for righteousness. How then was it accounted? While he was circumcised, or uncircumcised? Not while circumcised, but while uncircumcised. And he received the sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of the faith which he had while still uncircumcised, that he might be the father of all those who believe, though they are uncircumcised, that righteousness might be imputed to them also, and the father of circumcision to those who not only are of the circumcision, but who also walk in the steps of the faith which our father Abraham had while still uncircumcised.

For the promise that he would be the heir of the world was not to Abraham or to his seed through the law, but through the righteousness of faith. For if those who are of the law are heirs, faith is made void and the promise made of no effect, because the law brings about wrath; for where there is no law there is no transgression. Therefore it is of faith that it might be according to grace, so that the promise might be sure to all the seed, not only to those who are of the law, but also to those who are of the faith of Abraham, who is the father of us all (as it is written, “I have made you a father of many nations”) in the presence of Him whom he believed; God, who gives life to the dead and calls those things which do not exist as though they did; who, contrary to hope, in hope believed, so that he became the father of many nations, according to what was spoken, “So shall your descendants be.”

And not being weak in faith, he did not consider his own body, already dead (since he was about a hundred years old), and the deadness of Sarah’s womb. He did not waver at the promise of God through unbelief, but was strengthened in faith, giving glory to God, and being fully convinced that what He had promised He was also able to perform. And therefore “it was accounted to him for righteousness.” Now it was not written for his sake alone that it was imputed to him, but also for us. It shall be imputed to us who believe in Him who raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead.

One more question to answer. How were Abraham and the prophets of the Old Testament saved? They did not hear the gospel of Christ, so how were they saved? The answer to that question is in the passage above from Romans 4 and Hebrews 11:1-40, *Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the*

evidence of things not seen. For by it the elders obtained a good testimony. By faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that the things which are seen were not made of things which are visible. By faith Abel offered to God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, through which he obtained witness that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts; and through it he being dead still speaks. By faith Enoch was taken away so that he did not see death, “and was not found, because God had taken him”; for before he was taken he had this testimony, that he pleased God. But without faith it is impossible to please Him, for he who comes to God must believe that He is, and that He is a rewarder of those who diligently seek Him.

By faith Noah, being divinely warned of things not yet seen, moved with godly fear, prepared an ark for the saving of his household, by which he condemned the world and became heir of the righteousness which is according to faith. By faith Abraham obeyed when he was called to go out to the place which he would receive as an inheritance. And he went out, not knowing where he was going. By faith he dwelt in the land of promise as in a foreign country, dwelling in tents with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise; for he waited for the city which has foundations, whose builder and maker is God.

By faith Sarah herself also received strength to conceive seed, and she bore a child when she was past the age, because she judged Him faithful who had promised. Therefore from one man, and him as good as dead, were born as many as the stars of the sky in multitude—innumerable as the sand which is by the seashore. These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off were assured of them, embraced them and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth. For those who say such things declare plainly that they seek a homeland. And truly if they had called to mind that country from which they had come out, they would have had opportunity to return. But now they desire a better, that is, a heavenly country. Therefore God is not ashamed to be called their God, for He has prepared a city for them.

By faith Abraham, when he was tested, offered up Isaac, and he who had received the promises offered up his only begotten son, of whom it was said, “In Isaac your seed shall be called,” concluding that God was able to raise him up, even from the dead, from which he also received him in a figurative sense. By faith Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau concerning things to come. By faith Jacob, when he was dying, blessed each of the sons of Joseph, and worshiped, leaning on the top of his staff. By faith Joseph, when he was dying, made mention of the departure of the children of Israel, and gave instructions concerning his bones.

By faith Moses, when he was born, was hidden three months by his parents, because they saw he was a beautiful child; and they were not afraid of the king’s command. By faith Moses, when he became of age, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh’s daughter, choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God than to enjoy the passing pleasures of sin, esteeming the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures in Egypt; for he looked to the reward. By faith he forsook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king; for he endured as seeing Him who is invisible. By faith he kept the Passover and the sprinkling of blood, lest he who destroyed the firstborn should touch them. By faith they passed through the Red Sea as by dry land, whereas the Egyptians, attempting to do so, were drowned.

By faith the walls of Jericho fell down after they were encircled for seven days. By faith the harlot Rahab did not perish with those who did not believe, when she had received the spies with peace. And what more shall I say? For the time would fail me to tell of Gideon and Barak and Samson and Jephthah, also of David and Samuel and the prophets: who through faith subdued kingdoms, worked righteousness, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions, quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were made strong, became valiant in battle, turned to flight the armies of the aliens. Women received their dead raised to life again. Others were tortured,

not accepting deliverance, that they might obtain a better resurrection. Still others had trial of mockings and scourings, yes, and of chains and imprisonment. They were stoned, they were sawn in two, were tempted, were slain with the sword. They wandered about in sheepskins and goatskins, being destitute, afflicted, tormented— of whom the world was not worthy. They wandered in deserts and mountains, in dens and caves of the earth. And all these, having obtained a good testimony through faith, did not receive the promise, God having provided something better for us, that they should not be made perfect apart from us. It should become obvious to everyone reading that passage that the answer of how Abraham and the other patriarchs were saved was by faith, not works. It was only by their faith in the assurance of the promise of a Messiah that they were saved.

Some people will surely say that I'm too intense in what I write. I have a deep care, concern and love for all of mankind and desire that you understand and know the truth. My answer, to all who doubt these words, would have to be the same as that stated by Paul. 2 Timothy 1:12, *For this reason I also suffer these things; nevertheless I am not ashamed, for I know whom I have believed and am persuaded that He is able to keep what I have committed to Him until that Day.*

While we are at it let's clear up one more item. Why do I state the things I do about mankind's traditions? Is there anything in the Bible that would tell us that we had better watch what we believe, pertaining to the traditions of men? See if you see what I see. Matthew 15:3 NIV, *Jesus replied, "And why do you break the command of God for the sake of your traditions?"*

Matthew 15:8-9 NIV, *"These people honor me with their lips, but their hearts are far from me. They worship me in vain; their teachings are but rules taught by men."*

Mark 7:7-8 NIV, *"They worship me in vain; their teachings are but rules taught by men. You have let go of the commands of God and are holding on to the traditions of men."*

Is there any wonder why I write the things I do? My knowledge is that which the Holy Spirit gives me. If I can understand the Bible why is it that others don't? All I have done to gain much of this knowledge is read. Yes! I have stated that I believe God graced me with a gift of understanding, but if I can possess that gift others can also. My spirit tells me that we are getting closer and closer to the time of the Second Advent and the knowledge I have causes me to have a great concern for all of mankind. People all over the world are sending themselves to Hell because they will not believe in God's Word. Instead, they believe in mankind's traditions or some local custom or belief.

Unfortunately, I also have those who tell me that since the words I use, in many cases, are not directly from the Bible that I have either added to or taken away from the truth and what I am proclaiming is a lie. I have a serious question for all who may make a similar statement. How did Christ teach? Christ taught by using parables when He taught. Well, if Christ taught by parables, and that was Gospel, and the Apostles later asked Christ to explain the parables because they did not understand them, did Christ change His own teachings by adding to them? Sorry! Christ explained the parables because they did not understand, and by God's grace I am only explaining what the Holy Spirit has shown me. I do not believe that I am adding to, nor taking away from God's Word. I am only trying to help those who desire the truth, who want to see the truth, and who want to understand the truth. Praise God, not me.

The Great Tribulation

So much has been written about the Great Tribulation period; and yet in many ways, nothing has been said. I've read books from Hal Lindsey, Tim LaHaye and Jerry Jenkins and many others and watched the Left Behind movies from *Cloud Ten Productions*. What is really being taught? There are great story lines and plenty of action to follow, but what is really being said?

What I know for sure! The Church Age closes with the beginning of the Tribulation. The Tribulation is more for the Jewish people than any other group. It is during this period that the Jews accept that Messiah has come before, and is preparing to come again. Jeremiah 30:3-24, *“For behold, the days are coming,” says the Lord, “that I will bring back from captivity My people Israel and Judah,” says the Lord. “And I will cause them to return to the land that I gave to their fathers, and they shall possess it.”*

*Now these are the words that the Lord spoke concerning Israel and Judah. "For thus says the Lord: 'We have heard a voice of trembling, of fear, and not of peace. Ask now, and see, whether a man is ever in labor with child? So why do I see every man with his hands on his loins like a woman in labor, and all faces turned pale? Alas! For that day is great, so that none is like it; and **it is the time of Jacob's trouble**, but he shall be saved out of it."*

“For it shall come to pass in that day,” says the Lord of hosts, “That I will break his yoke from your neck, and will burst your bonds; foreigners shall no more enslave them. But they shall serve the Lord their God, and David their king, whom I will raise up for them.”

“Therefore do not fear, O My servant Jacob,” says the Lord, “Nor be dismayed, O Israel; for behold, I will save you from afar, and your seed from the land of their captivity. Jacob shall return, have rest and be quiet, and no one shall make him afraid. For I am with you,” says the Lord, “to save you; though I make a full end of all nations where I have scattered you, yet I will not make a complete end of you. But I will correct you in justice, and will not let you go altogether unpunished.” For thus says the Lord: “Your affliction is incurable, your wound is severe. There is no one to plead your cause, that you may be bound up; you have no healing medicines. All your lovers have forgotten you; they do not seek you; for I have wounded you with the wound of an enemy, with the chastisement of a cruel one, for the multitude of your iniquities, because your sins have increased. Why do you cry about your affliction? Your sorrow is incurable. Because of the multitude of your iniquities, because your sins have increased, I have done these things to you. Therefore all those who devour you shall be devoured; and all your adversaries, every one of them, shall go into captivity; those who plunder you shall become plunder, and all who prey upon you I will make a prey. For I will restore health to you and heal you of your wounds,” says the Lord, “because they called you an outcast saying: ‘This is Zion; no one seeks her.’” Thus says the Lord: “Behold, I will bring back the captivity of Jacob's tents, and have mercy on his dwelling places; the city shall be built upon its own mound, and the palace shall remain according to its own plan. Then out of them shall proceed thanksgiving and the voice of those who make merry; I will multiply them, and they shall not diminish; I will also glorify them, and they shall not be small. Their children also shall be as before, and their congregation shall be established before Me; and I will punish all who oppress them. Their nobles shall be from among them, and their governor shall come from their midst; then I will cause him to draw near, and he shall approach Me; for who is this who pledged his heart to approach Me?” says the Lord. “You shall be My people, and I will be your God.”

“Behold, the whirlwind of the Lord goes forth with fury, a continuing whirlwind; it will fall violently on the head of the wicked. The fierce anger of the Lord will not return until He has done it, and until He has performed the intents of His heart. In the latter days you will consider it.”

What I don't know for sure is whether the term Christian will fall into disuse. Since this is a time of Jewish conversion it may be that the followers (believers) may once again be called followers of The Way. Please remember that there are two groups of believers at this time; (1) Jewish believers, and (2) Gentile believers. I also don't know the total population figure of the earth that will begin the Millennial Kingdom of Christ.

I know there are several passages in scriptures that should lead mankind to accept that this will be a terrible time for those who are alive. Frankly, I wouldn't want to go through the Tribulation. Now,

I have said that there is an apparent error in the *Left Behind* series. Once we hit the end of the first three and a half years of the Tribulation we have a potential problem. There's another three and a half years to go, it would seem. Here's my it would seem question. Look at Matthew 24:22, the confirmation verse is Mark 13:20. Tim LaHaye is an outstanding teacher of Biblical prophecies; but yet, here's the verse and confirmation that the period we are speaking of will be cut short for the sake of the elect. It seems to me that there is a difference of opinion between Doctor LaHaye and Christ. Doctor LaHaye and Jerry Jenkins' books of the *Left Behind* series have gone beyond the midpoint and have entered the fourth year of the Tribulation period. I personally don't believe this is so. The problem is that Christ did not state a definite length of time the Tribulation would be shortened. At least there is no answer here in Matthew and Mark, however, I feel my spirit telling me there is an answer.

We're talking about the Tribulation period and one of the places we have information about the Tribulation is Revelation. Okay, turn with me to Revelation chapter 9. Chapter 9 tells, in part, of the fifth trumpet. There are two verses I'd like you to look at. First, notice in verse 4 the locust who are given power are instructed to not harm the grass, plants or trees. It would seem that mankind's food supply may once again be changed. When mankind was placed outside of the Garden mankind could eat of the trees and the grains of the field, not meat. It just may be that this will also be the case during the Millennial Age of Christ and mankind will not eat meat. The second verse to look at is verse 5. Notice that these locust could not kill but were given power to torment mankind for five months and this indication of time is repeated in verse 10. My spirit tells me this is the missing length of time in Matthew and Mark. My spirit tells me this is so because of the remainder of chapter 9. The sixth trumpet is a battle and just as we have seen in Genesis there is a look forward, jump back to get details, method of writing in Revelation. That being so, the battle that is being spoken of here in chapter 9 is more commonly called The Battle of Armageddon. Notice that this battle comes just prior to the seventh trumpet, which is the trumpet call that holds the Second Advent, or the coming of the true rider on a white horse.

Over the course of the last twenty-five years the United States has repeatedly returned to the Middle East to defend the rights of mankind from terrorist groups who desire to control the world and force their particular dogma of religion upon every individual. It is interesting to me that each time this nation speaks of war one of the first objections heard is that any war, at this time, would be the battle of Armageddon. Not so! Armageddon comes toward the close of the Tribulation and not at the beginning of the Tribulation. It seems that this is another sure way to define the true believer from the false believer. False believers do not know the Bible and continue to use fear as a method to mislead and deceive.

I have fought with my spirit on how to teach the truth of Revelation and what to do about the coming Millennial Age of Christ. I have had this fight because I keep looking at page numbers and as they grow larger and larger I wonder about the length of this work. However, I must yield to my spirit and do as I feel led to do. Therefore, I have previously completed a work on the Revelation and set it down. I feel that I must pick it back up, include part of it's truth and then move on to cover the Millennial period. So with that being said here are the teachings of the Revelation of Christ as given to John in approximately 90 CE.

End of Time Revelation of Christ

What better way to view the Revelation than from the viewpoint of the Apostle John? I pray that you will take an interest in what is presented here because a promise comes with the truth. It is not my place to judge my brother on what he thinks about this work, or even about the Bible and Quran being mentioned together in the same book. I do feel that one purpose I have is to attempt to cause those who will read this work to question some of the biases, opinions and ideology that they've been saddled with for years.

Each of us should also look around us to see if there isn't some way that we can help to put the relationship between God and mankind back into its proper perspective. Has mankind itself gone to the brink of destruction? Can we change some of our personal thoughts and repent so there is more harmonious worship of God? I believe that mankind does have some choice in the matter of the second coming of Christ and the end times. In some circles this is called the Doomsday Clock. Whatever you choose to call it man can influence the actions of God. By being reverent and praising Him and living by His Word we can continue to usher in future generations. However; by becoming indifferent and greedy and callous toward fellow man we are only running at full speed toward that day when order must be restored by a higher authority because we've lost our sense of responsibility completely.

Are we in the end times? That is hard to say. If you looked around to see the actions of mankind we surely must be. If you listen to many church leaders they say we are. But, is there any clue in the Bible itself to tell us if these are truly the final days prior to the second coming. Yes! If you use a concordance, or a PC Bible program, and search on the phrase last days the following results will occur. However, there are two reference verses that need to be read a little deeper to understand the meaning and so that you do not take things out of context.

Isaiah 2:2 NIV, *In the last days the mountain of the Lord's temple will be established as chief among the mountains; it will be raised above the hills, and all nations will stream to it.*

Hosea 3:5 NIV, *Afterward the Israelites will return and seek the LORD their God and David their king. They will come trembling to the LORD and to his blessings in the last days.*

Micah 4:1 NIV, *In the last days the mountain of the Lord's temple will be established as chief among the mountains; it will be raised above the hills, and peoples will stream to it.*

Acts 2:17 NIV, *"In the last days," God says, "I will pour out my Spirit on all people. Your sons and daughters will prophesy, your young men will see visions, your old men will dream dreams."*

The next reference in this search is 2 Timothy 3:1. However, I think a little more information is necessary to fully understand this passage.

2 Timothy 2:22-3:17 NIV, *Flee the evil desires of youth, and pursue righteousness, faith, love and peace, along with those who call on the Lord out of a pure heart. Don't have anything to do with foolish and stupid arguments, because you know they produce quarrels. And the Lord's servant must not quarrel; instead, he must be kind to everyone, able to teach, not resentful. Those who oppose him he must gently instruct, in the hope that God will grant them repentance leading them to a knowledge of the truth, and that they will come to their senses and escape from the trap of the devil, who has taken them captive to do his will.*

*But mark this: There will be terrible times in the last days. People will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, boastful, proud, abusive, disobedient to their parents, ungrateful, unholy, without love, unforgiving, slanderous, without self-control, brutal, not lovers of the good, treacherous, rash, conceited, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God having a form of godliness but denying its power. Look at this list of what is to be expected in the Last Days. Surely, by what is going on in the world we must be in the last days. Notice what the next sentence says. *Have nothing to do with them.**

They are the kind who worm their way into homes and gain control over weak-willed women, who are loaded down with sins and are swayed by all kinds of evil desires, always learning but never able to acknowledge the truth. Just as Jannes and Jambres opposed Moses, so also these men oppose the truth—men of depraved minds, who, as far as the faith is concerned, are rejected. But they will not get very far because, as in the case of those men, their folly will be clear to everyone.

You, however, know all about my teaching, my way of life, my purpose, faith, patience, love, endurance, persecutions, sufferings—what kinds of things happened to me in Antioch, Iconium and Lystra, the persecutions I endured. Yet the Lord rescued me from all of them. In fact, everyone who wants to live a godly life in Christ Jesus will be persecuted, while evil men and impostors will go from bad to worse, deceiving and being deceived. But as for you, continue in what you have learned and have become convinced of, because you know those from whom you learned it, and how from infancy you have known the holy Scriptures, which are able to make you wise for salvation through faith in Christ Jesus. All Scripture is God-breathed and is useful for teaching, rebuking, correcting and training in righteousness, so that the man of God may be thoroughly equipped for every good work.

Continuing with our search: the following verses also speak of the last days. Hebrews 1:2 NIV, *But in these last days He has spoken to us by His Son, whom He appointed heir of all things, and through whom He made the universe.*

James 5:3 NIV, *Your gold and silver are corroded. Their corrosion will testify against you and eat your flesh like fire. You have hoarded wealth in the last days.*

I had indicated that there were two places that I felt additional information was necessary to fully understand the verse contained in the reference search. The next verse in this search would be 2 Peter 3:3; however, I'm including the entire third chapter of 2nd Peter.

2 Peter 3 NIV, *Dear friends, this is now my second letter to you. I have written both of them as reminders to stimulate you to wholesome thinking. I want you to recall the words spoken in the past by the holy prophets and the command given by our Lord and Savior through your apostles. First of all, you must understand that in the last days scoffers will come, scoffing and following their own evil desires. They will say, "Where is this 'coming' he promised? Ever since our fathers died, everything goes on as it has since the beginning of creation." But they deliberately forget that long ago by God's word the heavens existed and the earth was formed out of water and by water. By these waters also the world of that time was deluged and destroyed. By the same word the present heavens and earth are reserved for fire, being kept for the day of judgment and destruction of ungodly men.*

But do not forget this one thing, dear friends: With the Lord a day is like a thousand years, and a thousand years are like a day. The Lord is not slow in keeping his promise, as some understand slowness. He is patient with you, not wanting anyone to perish, but everyone to come to repentance.

But the day of the Lord will come like a thief. The heavens will disappear with a roar; the elements will be destroyed by fire, and the earth and everything in it will be laid bare. Since everything will be destroyed in this way, what kind of people ought you to be? You ought to live holy and godly lives as you look forward to the day of God and speed its coming. That day will bring about the destruction of the heavens by fire, and the elements will melt in the heat. But in keeping with his promise we are looking forward to a new heaven and a new earth, the home of righteousness.

So then, dear friends, since you are looking forward to this, make every effort to be found spotless, blameless and at peace with Him. Bear in mind that our Lord's patience means salvation, just as our dear brother Paul also wrote you with the wisdom that God gave him. He writes the same way in all his letters, speaking in them of these matters. His letters contain some things that are hard to understand, which ignorant and unstable people distort, as they do the other Scriptures, to their own destruction. Therefore, dear friends, since you already know this, be on your guard so that you may not be carried away by the error of lawless men and fall from your secure position. But grow in the grace

and knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. To him be glory both now and forever! Amen.

There is no point for me to even attempt to add more to the Word of God. The truth has been stated and nothing more needs to be added. There's a fine line between this book and some others. If you find a book within a church organization that the leaders say you must use in order to interpret the Bible, turn and run as fast as possible for you have just found a cult. On the other hand there are books written, even this one, to help every Christian to understand more of God's Word. What was the difference? The difference between interpretation and understanding. God's people will understand through the Holy Spirit. Worldly people will be misled by an interpretation.

If you are worried about the future of the earth, or are curious about the meaning of the Revelation please review my book *Days to Come*.

Theocracy

My! What a strange title for a chapter! But, is it really? Think about this! We, for the most part, say that we are a Christian nation, we proclaim that we are Christian, we make statements pertaining to Heaven and Hell, we even say come Lord Jesus and ask for His return. But, and I must repeat that, but, do we truly understand what it is we are talking about?

Over the course of my journey through life I've learned several things. I've learned that there is a great misnomer over the use of the term religion. Anything that has the word God or Jesus in it is not a religion and not necessarily religious. The Bible is not of itself religious, it is the history of God's people and a guide book for humanity to understand and be obedient to His ordained law. It has nothing to do with ceremony, rites or rituals other than for cleanliness or health reasons. These guidelines do not establish a religion either. I've also learned that most people who proclaim to have been called to the service of God have no idea what the Bible really says, other than what these so-called Called Ministers have been taught by their own denominational beliefs and teachings. I've learned that there are certain portions of the Bible that ministers, priest, pastors, or elders will not teach about except for limited inclusions, and most certainly will not attempt to cover all of the topic.

This leads back to the title of this chapter and the first question. What is Theocracy? Even if we understand what the word means, do we understand the true meaning or what we are requesting? First things first, let us look to see what the dictionary tells us about this word: **the-oc-ra-cy** *n., pl. the-oc-ra-cies*. **1.** A government ruled by or subject to religious authority. **2.** A state so governed.

Right at the beginning we already have a problem induced from mankind itself. In the first definition we have the statement that a theocracy is a government ruled by or subject to religious authority. Yet, just above I proclaimed that there is a great misnomer in the use of the term religion.

Consider this! Recall everything that you have been taught about Jesus and tell me where any of His teachings were purely religious? Tell me where you can find that His disciples followed Him for religious reasons. Show me where, in the Bible, the Apostles, when speaking to Jesus about His kingdom, asked, or in some means conveyed, that His kingdom was a religious authority. What Jesus taught was God's love and how to be obedient to God's will. When the Apostles were asking about His kingdom they were not looking for some type of religious authority directing them in their daily lives. They were asking for a return of balance, of understanding in brotherly love, of harmony within, and between, all things. That my friends is what the Apostles were looking for and they were asking Jesus if He was going to restore those things at that time.

I have also learned that there is no government on the face of this planet that is perfect. We are not perfect people led by perfect governments. For the most part the tyrants and dictators of the world lead imperfect governments for the sake of their own selfish needs of power, greed and corruption. Additionally, those governments that started out in a democratic manner have allowed those who seek their own greatness to follow the obsession of power, control and influence to corrupt these systems beyond belief to the point that, absolute power corrupts absolutely has never before been so truly spoken as we are now seeing in many corners of the world and that includes our own country.

While I would like to show you the history of the wandering race called Israel, the Northern Kingdom of ancient Israel, that is not the purpose of this book. There are those books now on the market, or coming on the market that begin to loosen the veil covering ancient things and revealing truth. This truth has been covered up for so long by myth and tradition that it will be hard, and in some cases impossible, to remove the old beliefs set into these myths and traditions. These myths and tradi-

tions have now plagued mankind into believing lies and untruths about many things. Of my own work there is the book entitled *The Thirteenth Tribe of Israel* that will lead the reader on a journey from ancient Israel to a land(s) known by many today and this (these) land(s) represents the descendants of the Israelites. The prophecies of the Old Testament still hold true over these people. Yet, in most cases they know not who they are or where they came from and wonder amongst themselves why the calamities of life are now falling upon them in such a harsh manner. If they understood who they were, as a people, and would repent of their sins, God would once again bless them, but prophecy tells a different story and I for one believe that prophecy will win in the end. Why? Because it was told by God himself, through His prophets, to His people and they did not want to listen. Believe me they will listen before it is all over.

Let's get back to our current study. Why is it I say that ministers, priest, etc. (leaders) will not teach certain parts of the Bible. Once again, it has taken the course of my journey through life to observe, for the most part, those who lead congregations. It does not matter the denomination, the church leaders have taken on their position as a job (not necessarily a calling), and with any job there are certain perks and certain things that you will not do to jeopardize your job. With that said we must all understand that certain portions of the Bible, especially those dealing with prophecy, are highly controversial and the leader is not going to place his job, his position, his credentials, his family, nor his station in life in jeopardy. Thus he, and in all cases where I have used the masculine gender it also means the feminine gender, is not going to go into those areas of the Bible full of controversy because it might cost him his job, his reputation, his position, his house, his car, his insurance policy, his health insurance, his retirement plan and even his family or his very life. That is far too large a burden to carry and too large of a commitment to make. Therefore, the reality is that there are few who will take upon themselves the task of explaining certain things of the Bible.

So there are those, such as myself, whom God has sprinkled around and given instruction to, through the Holy Spirit, who lead this sprinkling of salt to take up the cause, take up the truth and proclaim in a bold manner the meaning of God's Word. This is so that others who seek the truth may find it without the girdle of mankind's religion squeezing the life out of those who desire to know facts instead of fiction.

During this journey together we shall go through the Word of God to illustrate all those verses that tell us about the Tribulation, the Second Coming, and life, as it shall be, in the Kingdom of Christ during His thousand year reign. Enjoy! This is the life everyone has asked for each time they have said the Lord's Prayer. Every time you say the Lord's Prayer you repeat that portion that says, **Thy Kingdom come, thy will be done!** Oh Yes! You've begged God to bring back our Lord Jesus and to set up His Kingdom upon the earth. Maybe, just maybe, it is time that someone told you what you have been begging for and how mankind is going to get to that place within God's plan.

Now, just before we begin, let me explain to you why I'm taking this task upon myself. I am not a minister at a church, a prophet, or a priest. I am an ordained minister, and have a Master's degree in Christian History, a Doctor of Divinity and a Doctor of Philosophy in Religion. The only reason for doing those things is because of the thoughts of men who say I must have letters after my name to be credible within the realm of men and within the world as a whole. If that is the case, than I'm the Reverend Doctor Charles E. Darnell, PhD, DD, MA, BA. Are you now impressed? I'm not! My knowledge is in the same category as Abraham, or Moses, or Jesus, or the Priest of Salem of the order of Melchizedek. It came from hours and hours of reading, study, prayer and the grace of God through His Holy Spirit to provide me with the knowledge and understanding that I possess. I'm taking this task upon myself because I have no church to give up, and no position or job to lose. I can afford to be open

and honest and as truthful as God wants, and desires, me to be because my needs have been fulfilled beyond my greatest imagination. My only cross is that of Christ, through which I have my only connection to God Almighty's Spirit and will. The things of this realm that can cause a man to deviate from his earthly mission have been taken from me and I bear no millstone upon my neck to drag me down into the abyss of the great deceiver who has misled many because of their desires upon this plain. I can be as open and as honest as is necessary and have nothing to lose. What can be taken from me at this point? My birthday perhaps!

Please allow me to be your guide into a world of grace, a world of love, a world of unbelievable harmony among all of God's creatures. Yes! There are those words within the Bible that will lead to everything that I've said and to every hope that mankind has ever dreamed. Few will ever venture to tell you about these things of the world to come.

So, let us take this journey together, by God's holy grace, into a realm of unbelievable love and understanding. Along this path we must first go through a period of trial and cleansing.

Here we go, hold on!

LOVE!

The first, and most important point to make in this presentation is an understanding of the term love. We have mixed emotions when we read this term or when it is attempted to be explained in a book, a sermon, or any other teaching that we may happen across.

However: Do you understand the word and its effect upon your daily life. When we went through our teen years we were full of raging hormones and love meant passion and secret meetings in dark places where we could release those pent-up feelings within us. As we matured love changed to the feelings of a spouse and children and what was meant within those relationships. When we went to church we may have felt a closeness to others of the same denomination, but most likely, we didn't call that love. We also met with resistance inside ourselves when the Priest or Pastor spoke of God's love for us. Many have felt that God's love for mankind was things such as rain or sunshine, the rotation of the seasons, or even a blessing upon a city, state or nation collectively. As we grew older we finished our schooling, went to work, got paid for our work and used the money for our families. Sure, we most likely gave some to various organizations, including our church but did we ever say or even feel that we loved our jobs, loved our neighbors, loved our government, or loved everything that was going on around us. Why not? Isn't that really what the love of God is? God loves everything of His creation except sin that causes a break in our relationship with God.

In order to teach even a small portion of truth pertaining to God's Love and what the Bible says in many places, we need to look more closely at this one word, or even to the words of the Bible that some people would say are a part or portion of total love. I'm not asking anyone to sit down and attempt to read every word in the Bible to find certain words. I do believe that it is quite easy to go through Strong's Concordance and look up the words we can find in the Bible that would mean love.

In an attempt to do just that I looked through Strong's and even tried to look up the word sex. There are no modern day slang words in Old English so my results were cut down to only five words. Those five words are copulation, fornication, knew, love and lust. Right off the bat I knew that it was not going to be easy to give clear meanings to some things. Look at the word knew for just a moment. I know from my readings that there is a verse in Genesis that indicates that Adam and Eve had sexual relations because it says in Genesis 4:1 that, *Adam knew Eve his wife*. It also says in Genesis 3:7 that, *They knew that they were naked*. Strong's identifies the word knew in these two verses as being the same word. So how is one to understand that Adam had relations with his wife. It really is not in the word knew but in the sentence as a whole. Genesis 4:1, *Adam knew Eve his wife; and she conceived, and bare Cain, and said I have gotten a man from the Lord*. So, the truth of the matter is that Adam and Eve had sexual relations. If not, please explain to me how Eve conceived.

It seems that the reality of the initial question is that there are four words we really have to deal with to find a starting point toward our quest. The first of these words is copulation and used the first time in Leviticus 15:16, 17 and 18. It seems that the meaning given to the Hebrew word in these three verses refers to the sexual act; or going back to the primitive root to lie down for sexual connection.

Let me make it perfectly clear that God gave sex to the human species no matter how much you have heard that sex is in many ways taboo. Turn back to Genesis 1:26-28. Isn't this the point on the sixth day that God made man. In verse 28 God blessed His creation and told them to, *Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it*. How, pray tell, is mankind going to multiply or replenish the earth?

Next, consider the word fornication. Perusing Strong's illustrates just how little we really understand the Bible. While many of you believe that you understand what fornication means let me ask

you this even before I show you the answer. Would you believe that there are five meanings for this one word? In the Old Testament there are two definitions given for this word, and there are three definitions given in the New Testament.

Let me see, I think we dropped out the two definitions for knew, had one definition for copulation, and the original five for fornication that turned out to have additional meanings and we now have eleven words from which we seek truth. Remember we only started with five words to look at to teach the truth about the word love and we already have eleven definitions that we have dealt with just to get through two words. What in the world are we going to have to do to get through the primary word of love in our four word search?

We haven't seen anything yet and have just now started to break the surface of understanding what love, as used in the Bible, is all about. Let's look at this one word love and see how many definitions we find.

All total we must look up twelve Hebrew words from the Old Testament that are translated to love in English. Twelve words that all translate as love and we haven't even gone to the New Testament to see the Greek words and what they mean.

Somehow along this search we have transcended from love to breath, meaning our soul and spirit. I guess, in many ways, love does encompass our spirit and our soul but how do we even begin to think in this manner and even accept that our spirit and soul could possibly tie to another being. Yet, that is exactly what the relationship to God is. We are all created in the image of God. We have a body, a spirit and a soul. Through our spirit and soul we are taught that God is Spirit. We are spirit and must worship in spirit. The battle over each and every man is fought over the soul. That battle is the choice we make about where we want to spend eternity. Do we want to be with God (good) or do we want to spend eternity with Satan (rebellion and sin — apart from God)?

We continue to transcend and view words that do not equate to love but through the process we have come to understand that love, meaning pure love, must also have some substance of intellect or understanding. Therefore, it would seem to this author that to have a complete understanding of love, an individual must also have some understanding of one's own spirit and soul and how it connects to the Divine Spirit of God in the universal oneness that is there between all living creatures.

We haven't even gotten through half of the words that equate to love in the Greek language and have gone to a depth of understanding and knowledge that few would ever attempt to undertake or even begin to try and understand. Yet, here we are, you and I, together, viewing the meaning of Hebrew and Greek words that only translate to the English word love. We have thus surpassed most sermons, teachings and lessons taught to us from our denominational churches. Do you begin to understand what I meant when I said that this subject was controversial and most Priest or Pastors would not ever attempt to teach you these things. Really, I have nothing to lose and you have everything to gain. Truth will honestly set you free. But, you must be willing to study and take the time to know the truth and to accept the truth. When your know, knows that what you know is the truth, then, and only then, you have gotten to that place to understand the truth of what you know. Now, that is a mouth full, but it is true. Until you understand within your spirit and your soul that what you know is the truth you haven't gotten there and are still searching. There are far too many individuals that are searching today to find the truth and don't know where to turn, even to begin the search. One would think that the church, and its leaders, would be the source to lead any person into this field of study and enlightenment. Alas, that is not the case and many go on their daily journey without answers, disillusioned by what they see and hear, unaware of where the actual answers are hidden or how to find those answers. Then God sends those weird people who don't seem to fit into any category. They are those who are always going against the flow of everyone else. You know the ones! They have left the church and the teachings of their denomination. They read all the time and many things just seem to roll off their backs. They really

are odd ducks. They really don't fit any norm and are just there, but they do have answers. Answers to questions that many people want resolved. Yet, some are too obsessed to ask or believe that someone has been placed along their personal pathway that just might give them the truth that the church, Priest, or the Pastor will not give them.

I am one such odd duck. This work is the result of all those questions you've been asking and no one seems to want to give you the answers. Keep reading we will get to all those answers that you desire to know. But first, we must get through our study of the words that translate to the word love in the English language.

I did a subtotal after the Hebrew words and must do the same at this point and run a full total. This is so amazing to me. There are a total of ten words that are listed under the word love in Strong's and yet we have looked at and reviewed a total of nineteen words in the New Testament alone. The combined total of words that we have gone through to even begin to understand the word love is a total of 30 different words. No wonder mankind finds it hard to read and understand the Bible. There are very few people that would even take the time to try and figure all this out. Then again to try and put it together so someone else could understand it, is even harder to imagine.

Alas, we still have one more word that we need to review before we can call this completion. That word is lust and find that there are even more meanings to add to our growing list. For the sake of anyone who is interested in the full outcome of this search I have included the full list of definitions and cross references in Appendix I.

We now have all our words checked and defined. Amazing, we started with four words, dropped the two references for the word knew but look at what we picked up by doing the cross references for these four words. For these four words we ended up with a total of 56 definitions. Is there any wonder why so many people refuse to read and attempt to understand the Bible. We only looked at four words and ended up with cross references and additional meanings that total 56 entries. Imagine what the results would be to try and go through the entire Bible so you had the original meaning of what was written. Islam uses this against the Christians. Moslems do not want the Quran translated, instead they want it taught in the original tongue of Arabic. The reason is, you hear the original meaning and do not have thought and idea or concept lost within the translation. Yet, at the same time, the leaders of our church, our Pastor, or our Priest should be able to give us answers such as those stated in this study, but, even they do not take the time to go to this depth of study.

We have read what Strong's says about the various words meaning love but what does the Bible itself say about love? There is a point within the Bible that love is explained by the Apostle Paul and that is in 1 Corinthians 13:

1 Corinthians 13

If I speak in the tongues of men and of angels, but have not love, I am only a resounding gong or a clanging cymbal. If I have the gift of prophecy and can fathom all mysteries and all knowledge, and if I have a faith that can move mountains, but have not love, I am nothing. If I give all I possess to the poor and surrender my body to the flames, but have not love, I gain nothing.

Love is patient, love is kind. It does not envy, it does not boast, it is not proud. It is not rude, it is not self-seeking, it is not easily angered, it keeps no record of wrongs. Love does not delight in evil but rejoices with the truth. It always protects, always trusts, always hopes, always perseveres.

Love never fails. But where there are prophecies, they will cease; where there are tongues, they will be stilled; where there is knowledge, it will pass away. For we know in part and we prophesy in part, but when perfection comes, the imperfect disappears. When I was a child, I talked like a child, I thought like a child, I reasoned like a child. When I became a man, I put childish ways behind me. Now we see but a poor reflection as in a mirror; then we shall see face to face. Now I know in part; then I shall know fully, even as I am fully known.

And now these three remain: faith, hope and love. But the greatest of these is love. NIV

It would seem to this author that love is very important to the spirit and soul of mankind. Allow me to explain my thinking on this point. Within these 13 verses given to us from Paul, we learn several things. Notice in verse 8 that even knowledge will pass away. Verse 10 tells us when this knowledge will pass away. That is when perfection comes and the imperfect disappears. But notice what it says in verse 13. Doesn't it say that faith, hope and love remains? And the greatest of these is love.

I also know that there are many people who must see what is said in the King James version or they do not believe it is in the Bible. Therefore, here are verses 8 through 13 from the KJV: *Charity never faileth: but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away. For we know in part, and we prophesy in part. But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away. When I was a child, I spake as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childish things. For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known. And now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three; but the greatest of these is charity.*

When we die, most people, have a hard time understanding what happens to us, where we go and what we do. It would seem that all we've been told about being able to take anything with us as we make this passing has a slightly different answer. We take these three things: faith, hope and love. So, love is an important part of our spirit and our soul.

Here is my question at this moment: do you now begin to understand the full meaning of love? It is not simply one act, one emotion, one concept, or even one feeling. It surrounds you, your family, friends, your neighbors, everything that you contact. Yes! You can find part of the Law of Moses contained within these definitions pertaining to the words we searched. When we look at all things we should have been taught, we find that the bottom line is that God will vindicate His holy name through the peoples of ancient Israel. That vindication will include His great love for mankind.

Millennial Age of Christ

I have a major question at this point in this book. If the church is removed prior to the Millennial Age why worry about the forthcoming kingdom of Christ? Well, there are three answers to that question.

First, I am personally led to believe that God has told me to write about the Millennial Age. That's good enough for me. I'll answer that challenge and complete the full work as the knowledge has been given to me. Secondly, I can only hope that there are some who might read this book and be saved. Thirdly, at some point in the distant future, all of this will occur and there will be those who understand the situation and the consequences. They may happen upon this book and find the answers that they need to be saved. So, to answer the question, I frankly, don't care. God has given this to me for a reason and it just may not be up to me to understand the full impact of that knowledge. All I can tell you is that I've been given this to understand and **my task is to write it down and pass it on**. With that being said, let's look at the Millennial Kingdom of Christ. For the purposes of this portion of study the New King James Version (NKJV) will be used as our source, unless specifically noted otherwise.

There are several places that information must be gathered to understand the Millennial Kingdom. If there is one single source to learn about the Millennial Age it is the Bible, however, there is no one chapter, or book, in the Bible that will give us the full answers. For a long time I thought, as many others have, that the answer was contained in Revelation. After careful study that is not the source for the answer I sought. Actually the Millennial Age, the last rebellion of Satan, the Second resurrection and the Great White Throne Judgement are all revealed in Revelation 20, which contains 15 verses. The truth is most of the answers pertaining to the Kingdom period rest in the Old Testament and I think I know why. Let us all remember that Israel still represents God's chosen people. The point where God's Word deals with Israel is in the Old Testament, therefore, the answer to the truth must be in the Old Testament.

We must remember that during the Millennial Reign the Tribulation has closed, Satan has been bound for one thousand years and Joshua (Jesus, Messiah or Christ) has set foot on the earth to take possession of what was in the title deed. It is at that point that we must turn back to the book of Daniel to see what is going to happen next. The book of Daniel, in the Old Testament, is rich in end time prophecy. Several times we find Daniel speaks of the number of days. These days give us the opening into what is going to happen at the beginning of the Millennial Age. We see a list/clue in Daniel 8:17, . . . *"Understand, son of man, that the vision refers to the time of the end."* Daniel 8:26, . . . *"For it refers to many days in the future."*

First, and before we look at some of these numbers, let's look at Daniel to see that the Tribulation is foretold. This is done in Daniel 9:24:27, *"Seventy weeks are determined for your people and for your holy city, to finish the transgression, to make an end of sins, to make reconciliation for iniquity, to bring in everlasting righteousness, to seal up vision and prophecy, and to anoint the Most Holy (Jesus). Know therefore and understand, that from the going forth of the command to restore and build Jerusalem until Messiah the Prince, there shall be seven weeks and sixty-two weeks; the street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublesome times. And after the sixty-two weeks Messiah shall be cut off, but not for Himself; and the people of the prince who is to come (Antichrist) shall destroy the city and the sanctuary. The end of it shall be with a flood, and till the end of the war desolations are determined. Then he (Antichrist) shall confirm a covenant with many for one week (seven year Tribulation Period); but in the middle of the week (3 1/2 years) he shall bring an end to sacrifice and offering. And on the wing of abominations shall be one who makes desolate, even until the consummation, which is determined, is poured out on the desolate."*

It doesn't seem that we have any defined period of time given in this passage from Daniel. It is for that reason I inserted Jesus, Antichrist, the Tribulation (represented by the term one week), and the middle of the week (as 3 1/2 years). We must return to Revelation to gather one more reference to the term 3 1/2 years. Revelation 11:2b-3, *And they will tread the holy city underfoot for forty-two months. And I will give power to my two witnesses, and they will prophesy one thousand two hundred and sixty days, clothed in sackcloth.*” Many will say that the math doesn't work correctly because 365 days for a year multiplied by 3 plus 182 days for a half-year total 1277 days. The answer is in the verse reference from Revelation. Notice the use of the term forty-two months. That does indeed equal 3 and 1/2 years. Now multiply 42 by a standard month being 30 days and you will have the result of 1260 days.

However, when we go further to understand things recorded in Daniel we run into two additional time periods. Let me put the verses here for you before we discuss what the two additional time intervals are. The two time periods and a little more information is given in Daniel 12:1-12, *“At that time Michael shall stand up, the great prince who stands watch over the sons of your people; and there shall be a time of trouble, such as never was since there was a nation, even to that time. And at that time your people shall be delivered, every one who is found written in the book. And many of those who sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, some to shame and everlasting contempt. Those who are wise shall shine like the brightness of the firmament, and those who turn many to righteousness like the stars forever and ever. But you, Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book until the time of the end; many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall increase.”*

Then I, Daniel, looked; and there stood two others, one on this river bank and the other on that river bank. And one said to the man clothed in linen, who was above the waters of the river, “How long shall the fulfillment of these wonders be?” Then I heard the man clothed in linen, who was above the waters of the river, when he held up his right hand and his left hand to heaven, and swore by Him who lives forever, that it shall be for a time, times, and half a time; and when the power of the holy people has been completely shattered, all these things shall be finished.

Although I heard, I did not understand. Then I said, “My lord, what shall be the end of these things?”

And he said, “Go your way, Daniel, for the words are closed up and sealed till the time of the end. Many shall be purified, made white, and refined, but the wicked shall do wickedly; and none of the wicked shall understand, but the wise shall understand. And from the time that the daily sacrifice is taken away, and the abomination of desolation is set up, there shall be one thousand two hundred and ninety days. Blessed is he who waits, and comes to the one thousand three hundred and thirty-five days.”

We have our three time periods. We know that the base is 1,260 days, or three and 1/2 years, and the first period Daniel speaks of is 1,290 or 30 days later. The second time period is 1,335 days, or 45 days after the end of the first time period and together these two periods cover 75 days. Here's the question: What is it that Joshua (Jesus, Messiah or Christ) is going to do in the first 75 days of the Kingdom period?

I've tried time and time again in this work to tell you, the reader, that the Church Age closes out with the taking out of the church. Everything reverts back to Israel as God's chosen people and we have to find out what prophecy says about Israel in this time to fully understand what is taking place. To find part of the answer for this question we must go to the book of Ezekiel. Now, let me give you fair warning, I thought this would be a simple few pages to explain the Kingdom period. Not so, to fully understand everything that is to take place a person must study the history and prophecies pertaining to Israel.

Therefore, the following will include all the verses between Ezekiel 40 and Ezekiel 48. Ezekiel 40, *In the twenty-fifth year of our captivity, at the beginning of the year, on the tenth day of the month,*

in the fourteenth year after the city was captured, on the very same day the hand of the LORD was upon me; and He took me there. In the visions of God He took me into the land of Israel and set me on a very high mountain; on it toward the south was something like the structure of a city. He took me there, and behold, there was a man whose appearance was like the appearance of bronze. He had a line of flax and a measuring rod in his hand, and he stood in the gateway. And the man said to me, "Son of man, look with your eyes and hear with your ears, and fix your mind on everything I show you; for you were brought here so that I might show them to you. Declare to the house of Israel everything you see."

Ezekiel says at the end of verse 4 that he is told by the man (angel) to Declare to the house of Israel everything you see. The reference is not being made to the present day country of Israel. The reference being made is to the Northern Kingdom, the Ten Lost Tribes of Israel who were taken into captivity 134 years prior to Judah being taken to Babylon. Most Old Testament prophecies that refer to Israel are speaking about the Northern Kingdom. These prophecies are still in effect toward Israel and have not been deleted or removed from God's foretold truth. Many of these prophecies are only meant for the end of time. The unfortunate fact is that the descendants of the Ten Tribes do not know who they are or what these prophecies mean to themselves. What is being described and measured is the temple. We must remember that at the time of the division between Judah and Israel, Israel took up idolatry and God gave Israel a bill of divorce. Since that time Israel has not been around the temple and does not even know what it looked like. At the end of time Judah will have rebuilt the temple and the two staffs of Beauty and Bonds will be put back together and be one country under the leadership of Christ. Even so Israel will not know about the temple and we read in verse 4 that these verses are to be declared to the house of Israel. Israel needs to understand the temple and the information needed is given to Israel in these verses.

Now there was a wall all around the outside of the temple. In the man's hand was a measuring rod six cubits long, each being a cubit and a handbreadth; and he measured the width of the wall structure, one rod; and the height, one rod. Then he went to the gateway which faced east; and he went up its stairs and measured the threshold of the gateway, which was one rod wide, and the other threshold was one rod wide. Each gate chamber was one rod long and one rod wide; between the gate chambers was a space of five cubits; and the threshold of the gateway by the vestibule of the inside gate was one rod. He also measured the vestibule of the inside gate, one rod. Then he measured the vestibule of the gateway, eight cubits; and the gateposts, two cubits. The vestibule of the gate was on the inside. In the eastern gateway were three gate chambers on one side and three on the other; the three were all the same size; also the gateposts were of the same size on this side and that side. He measured the width of the entrance to the gateway, ten cubits; and the length of the gate, thirteen cubits. There was a space in front of the gate chambers, one cubit on this side and one cubit on that side; the gate chambers were six cubits on this side and six cubits on that side. Then he measured the gateway from the roof of one gate chamber to the roof of the other; the width was twenty-five cubits, as door faces door. He measured the gateposts, sixty cubits high, and the court all around the gateway extended to the gatepost. From the front of the entrance gate to the front of the vestibule of the inner gate was fifty cubits. There were beveled window frames in the gate chambers and in their intervening archways on the inside of the gateway all around, and likewise in the vestibules. There were windows all around on the inside. And on each gatepost were palm trees.

Then he brought me into the outer court; and there were chambers and a pavement made all around the court; thirty chambers faced the pavement. The pavement was by the side of the gateways,

corresponding to the length of the gateways; this was the lower pavement. Then he measured the width from the front of the lower gateway to the front of the inner court exterior, one hundred cubits toward the east and the north. On the outer court was also a gateway facing north, and he measured its length and its width. Its gate chambers, three on this side and three on that side, its gateposts and its archways, had the same measurements as the first gate; its length was fifty cubits and its width twenty-five cubits. Its windows and those of its archways, and also its palm trees, had the same measurements as the gateway facing east; it was ascended by seven steps, and its archway was in front of it.

A gate of the inner court was opposite the northern gateway, just as the eastern gateway; and he measured from gateway to gateway, one hundred cubits. After that he brought me toward the south, and there a gateway was facing south; and he measured its gateposts and archways according to these same measurements. There were windows in it and in its archways all around like those windows; its length was fifty cubits and its width twenty-five cubits. Seven steps led up to it, and its archway was in front of them; and it had palm trees on its gateposts, one on this side and one on that side. There was also a gateway on the inner court, facing south; and he measured from gateway to gateway toward the south, one hundred cubits. Then he brought me to the inner court through the southern gateway; he measured the southern gateway according to these same measurements. Also its gate chambers, its gateposts, and its archways were according to these same measurements; there were windows in it and in its archways all around; it was fifty cubits long and twenty-five cubits wide. There were archways all around, twenty-five cubits long and five cubits wide. Its archways faced the outer court, palm trees were on its gateposts, and going up to it were eight steps.

And he brought me into the inner court facing east; he measured the gateway according to these same measurements. Also its gate chambers, its gateposts, and its archways were according to these same measurements; and there were windows in it and in its archways all around; it was fifty cubits long and twenty-five cubits wide. Its archways faced the outer court, and palm trees were on its gateposts on this side and on that side; and going up to it were eight steps.

Then he brought me to the north gateway and measured it according to these same measurements; also its gate chambers, its gateposts, and its archways. It had windows all around; its length was fifty cubits and its width twenty-five cubits. Its gateposts faced the outer court, palm trees were on its gateposts on this side and on that side, and going up to it were eight steps. There was a chamber and its entrance by the gateposts of the gateway, where they washed the burnt offering. In the vestibule of the gateway were two tables on this side and two tables on that side, on which to slay the burnt offering, the sin offering, and the trespass offering. At the outer side of the vestibule, as one goes up to the entrance of the northern gateway, were two tables; and on the other side of the vestibule of the gateway were two tables. Four tables were on this side and four tables on that side, by the side of the gateway, eight tables on which they slaughtered the sacrifices. There were also four tables of hewn stone for the burnt offering, one cubit and a half long, one cubit and a half wide, and one cubit high; on these they laid the instruments with which they slaughtered the burnt offering and the sacrifice. Inside were hooks, a handbreadth wide, fastened all around; and the flesh of the sacrifices was on the tables.

Outside the inner gate were the chambers for the singers in the inner court, one facing south at the side of the northern gateway, and the other facing north at the side of the southern gateway. Then he said to me, "This chamber which faces south is for the priests who have charge of the temple. The chamber which faces north is for the priests who have charge of the altar; these are the sons of Zadok, from the sons of Levi, who come near the LORD to minister to Him." And he measured the court, one hundred cubits long and one hundred cubits wide, foursquare. The altar was in front of the temple. Then he brought me to the vestibule of the temple and measured the doorposts of the vestibule, five cubits on this side and five cubits on that side; and the width of the gateway was three cubits on this side and three cubits on that side. The length of the vestibule was twenty cubits, and the width eleven

cubits; and by the steps which led up to it there were pillars by the doorposts, one on this side and another on that side.

Ezekiel 41, Then he brought me into the sanctuary and measured the doorposts, six cubits wide on one side and six cubits wide on the other side; the width of the tabernacle. The width of the entryway was ten cubits, and the side walls of the entrance were five cubits on this side and five cubits on the other side; and he measured its length, forty cubits, and its width, twenty cubits. Also he went inside and measured the doorposts, two cubits; and the entrance, six cubits high; and the width of the entrance, seven cubits. He measured the length, twenty cubits; and the width, twenty cubits, beyond the sanctuary; and he said to me, "This is the Most Holy Place."

Next, he measured the wall of the temple, six cubits. The width of each side chamber all around the temple was four cubits on every side. The side chambers were in three stories, one above the other, thirty chambers in each story; they rested on ledges which were for the side chambers all around, that they might be supported, but not fastened to the wall of the temple. As one went up from story to story, the side chambers became wider all around, because their supporting ledges in the wall of the temple ascended like steps; therefore the width of the structure increased as one went up from the lowest story to the highest by way of the middle one.

I also saw an elevation all around the temple; it was the foundation of the side chambers, a full rod, that is, six cubits high. The thickness of the outer wall of the side chambers was five cubits, and so also the remaining terrace by the place of the side chambers of the temple. And between it and the wall chambers was a width of twenty cubits all around the temple on every side. The doors of the side chambers opened on the terrace, one door toward the north and another toward the south; and the width of the terrace was five cubits all around.

The building that faced the separating courtyard at its western end was seventy cubits wide; the wall of the building was five cubits thick all around, and its length ninety cubits. So he measured the temple, one hundred cubits long; and the separating courtyard with the building and its walls was one hundred cubits long; also the width of the eastern face of the temple, including the separating courtyard, was one hundred cubits.

He measured the length of the building behind it, facing the separating courtyard, with its galleries on the one side and on the other side, one hundred cubits, as well as the inner temple and the porches of the court, their doorposts and the beveled window frames. And the galleries all around their three stories opposite the threshold were paneled with wood from the ground to the windows; the windows were covered; from the space above the door, even to the inner room, as well as outside, and on every wall all around, inside and outside, by measure. And it was made with cherubim and palm trees, a palm tree between cherub and cherub. Each cherub had two faces, so that the face of a man was toward a palm tree on one side, and the face of a young lion toward a palm tree on the other side; thus it was made throughout the temple all around. From the floor to the space above the door, and on the wall of the sanctuary, cherubim and palm trees were carved.

The doorposts of the temple were square, as was the front of the sanctuary; their appearance was similar. The altar was of wood, three cubits high, and its length two cubits. Its corners, its length, and its sides were of wood; and he said to me, "This is the table that is before the LORD." The temple and the sanctuary had two doors. The doors had two panels apiece, two folding panels: two panels for one door and two panels for the other door. Cherubim and palm trees were carved on the doors of the temple just as they were carved on the walls. A wooden canopy was on the front of the vestibule outside. There were beveled window frames and palm trees on one side and on the other, on the sides of the vestibule; also on the side chambers of the temple and on the canopies.

Ezekiel 42, Then he brought me out into the outer court, by the way toward the north; and he brought me into the chamber which was opposite the separating courtyard, and which was opposite the

building toward the north. Facing the length, which was one hundred cubits (the width was fifty cubits), was the north door. Opposite the inner court of twenty cubits, and opposite the pavement of the outer court, was gallery against gallery in three stories.

In front of the chambers, toward the inside, was a walk ten cubits wide, at a distance of one cubit; and their doors faced north. Now the upper chambers were shorter, because the galleries took away space from them more than from the lower and middle stories of the building. For they were in three stories and did not have pillars like the pillars of the courts; therefore the upper level was shortened more than the lower and middle levels from the ground up.

And a wall which was outside ran parallel to the chambers, at the front of the chambers, toward the outer court; its length was fifty cubits. The length of the chambers toward the outer court was fifty cubits, whereas that facing the temple was one hundred cubits. At the lower chambers was the entrance on the east side, as one goes into them from the outer court. Also there were chambers in the thickness of the wall of the court toward the east, opposite the separating courtyard and opposite the building.

There was a walk in front of them also, and their appearance was like the chambers which were toward the north; they were as long and as wide as the others, and all their exits and entrances were according to plan. And corresponding to the doors of the chambers that were facing south, as one enters them, there was a door in front of the walk, the way directly in front of the wall toward the east. Then he said to me, "The north chambers and the south chambers, which are opposite the separating courtyard, are the holy chambers where the priests who approach the LORD shall eat the most holy offerings. There they shall lay the most holy offerings; the grain offering, the sin offering, and the trespass offering; for the place is holy. When the priests enter them, they shall not go out of the holy chamber into the outer court; but there they shall leave their garments in which they minister, for they are holy. They shall put on other garments; then they may approach that which is for the people."

Now when he had finished measuring the inner temple, he brought me out through the gateway that faces toward the east, and measured it all around. He measured the east side with the measuring rod, five hundred rods by the measuring rod all around. He measured the north side, five hundred rods by the measuring rod all around. He measured the south side, five hundred rods by the measuring rod. He came around to the west side and measured five hundred rods by the measuring rod. He measured it on the four sides; it had a wall all around, five hundred cubits long and five hundred wide, to separate the holy areas from the common.

Ezekiel 43, Afterward he brought me to the gate, the gate that faces toward the east. And behold, the glory of the God of Israel came from the way of the east. His voice was like the sound of many waters; and the earth shone with His glory. It was like the appearance of the vision which I saw; like the vision which I saw when I came to destroy the city. The visions were like the vision which I saw by the River Chebar; and I fell on my face. And the glory of the LORD came into the temple by way of the gate which faces toward the east. The Spirit lifted me up and brought me into the inner court; and behold, the glory of the LORD filled the temple.

Then I heard Him speaking to me from the temple, while a man stood beside me. And He said to me, "Son of man, this is the place of My throne and the place of the soles of My feet, where I will dwell in the midst of the children of Israel forever. No more shall the house of Israel defile My holy name, they nor their kings, by their harlotry or with the carcasses of their kings on their high places. When they set their threshold by My threshold, and their doorpost by My doorpost, with a wall between them and Me, they defiled My holy name by the abominations which they committed; therefore I have consumed them in My anger. Now let them put their harlotry and the carcasses of their kings far away from Me, and I will dwell in their midst forever. Son of man, describe the temple to the house of Israel, that they may be ashamed of their iniquities; and let them measure the pattern. And if they are ashamed of all that they have done, make known to them the design of the temple and its arrangement, its exits and its en-

trances, its entire design and all its ordinances, all its forms and all its laws. Write it down in their sight, so that they may keep its whole design and all its ordinances, and perform them. This is the law of the temple: The whole area surrounding the mountain top is most holy. Behold, this is the law of the temple.”

Oh Israel, how I long to have you know the truth and to understand what God has given to me to write down and explain for you. Your forefathers listened to your first king and every generation since has defiled the name of God and the name of His son. God loves you and has said that He will rejoin the two kingdoms of all Israel together. The house of Israel and the house of Judah shall be one, once again, and shall be such during the reign of Christ for the Millennial Age. The full impact of these verses is given in this 43rd chapter of Ezekiel. Reread the paragraph above, this paragraph represents verses 7 through 12. If you do not understand the impact of these verses you need to read my book, *The Thirteenth Tribe of Israel*, to understand who Israel is today. God is telling you what He is getting ready to do. Jesus is telling you that He is preparing to take His throne on the earth. Israel needs to understand who they are and prepare for the change that is coming. Prepare yourselves children of Abraham for your LORD is waiting for you to vindicate His name and the name of His Father.

“These are the measurements of the altar in cubits (the cubit is one cubit and a handbreadth): the base one cubit high and one cubit wide, with a rim all around its edge of one span. This is the height of the altar: from the base on the ground to the lower ledge, two cubits; the width of the ledge, one cubit; from the smaller ledge to the larger ledge, four cubits; and the width of the ledge, one cubit. The altar hearth is four cubits high, with four horns extending upward from the hearth. The altar hearth is twelve cubits long, twelve wide, square at its four corners; the ledge, fourteen cubits long and fourteen wide on its four sides, with a rim of half a cubit around it; its base, one cubit all around; and its steps face toward the east.”

And He said to me, “Son of man, thus says the Lord GOD: ‘These are the ordinances for the altar on the day when it is made, for sacrificing burnt offerings on it, and for sprinkling blood on it. You shall give a young bull for a sin offering to the priests, the Levites, who are of the seed of Zadok, who approach Me to minister to Me,’ says the Lord GOD. ‘You shall take some of its blood and put it on the four horns of the altar, on the four corners of the ledge, and on the rim around it; thus you shall cleanse it and make atonement for it. Then you shall also take the bull of the sin offering, and burn it in the appointed place of the temple, outside the sanctuary. On the second day you shall offer a kid of the goats without blemish for a sin offering; and they shall cleanse the altar, as they cleansed it with the bull. When you have finished cleansing it, you shall offer a young bull without blemish, and a ram from the flock without blemish. When you offer them before the LORD, the priests shall throw salt on them, and they will offer them up as a burnt offering to the LORD. Every day for seven days you shall prepare a goat for a sin offering; they shall also prepare a young bull and a ram from the flock, both without blemish. Seven days they shall make atonement for the altar and purify it, and so consecrate it. When these days are over it shall be, on the eighth day and thereafter, that the priests shall offer your burnt offerings and your peace offerings on the altar; and I will accept you,’ says the Lord GOD.”

Ezekiel 44, Then He brought me back to the outer gate of the sanctuary which faces toward the east, but it was shut. And the LORD said to me, “This gate shall be shut; it shall not be opened, and no man shall enter by it, because the LORD God of Israel has entered by it; therefore it shall be shut. As for the prince, because he is the prince, he may sit in it to eat bread before the LORD; he shall enter by way of the vestibule of the gateway, and go out the same way.”

We have a noun (prince) and a pronoun (he) that appear to give us a problem in our understanding. The passage above just spoke about *the LORD God of Israel* and immediately following we have *the prince*. Who is this prince? By this passage of scripture it would seem that the prince would be Jesus and both the noun and pronoun should be capitalized. However, as we read further in Ezekiel we shall see that the prince cannot be Jesus. I will provide an answer as we go through these verses from Ezekiel.

Also He brought me by way of the north gate to the front of the temple; so I looked, and behold, the glory of the LORD filled the house of the LORD; and I fell on my face. And the LORD said to me, "Son of man, mark well, see with your eyes and hear with your ears, all that I say to you concerning all the ordinances of the house of the LORD and all its laws. Mark well who may enter the house and all who go out from the sanctuary. Now say to the rebellious, to the house of Israel, 'Thus says the Lord GOD: O house of Israel, let us have no more of all your abominations. When you brought in foreigners, uncircumcised in heart and uncircumcised in flesh, to be in My sanctuary to defile it; My house; and when you offered My food, the fat and the blood, then they broke My covenant because of all your abominations. And you have not kept charge of My holy things, but you have set others to keep charge of My sanctuary for you.'"

Thus says the Lord GOD: "No foreigner, uncircumcised in heart or uncircumcised in flesh, shall enter My sanctuary, including any foreigner who is among the children of Israel. And the Levites who went far from Me, when Israel went astray, who strayed away from Me after their idols, they shall bear their iniquity. Yet they shall be ministers in My sanctuary, as gatekeepers of the house and ministers of the house; they shall slay the burnt offering and the sacrifice for the people, and they shall stand before them to minister to them. Because they ministered to them before their idols and caused the house of Israel to fall into iniquity, therefore I have raised My hand in an oath against them," says the Lord GOD, "that they shall bear their iniquity. And they shall not come near Me to minister to Me as priest, nor come near any of My holy things, nor into the Most Holy Place; but they shall bear their shame and their abominations which they have committed. Nevertheless I will make them keep charge of the temple, for all its work, and for all that has to be done in it. But the priests, the Levites, the sons of Zadok, who kept charge of My sanctuary when the children of Israel went astray from Me, they shall come near Me to minister to Me; and they shall stand before Me to offer to Me the fat and the blood," says the Lord GOD.

"They shall enter My sanctuary, and they shall come near My table to minister to Me, and they shall keep My charge. And it shall be, whenever they enter the gates of the inner court, that they shall put on linen garments; no wool shall come upon them while they minister within the gates of the inner court or within the house. They shall have linen turbans on their heads and linen trousers on their bodies; they shall not clothe themselves with anything that causes sweat. When they go out to the outer court, to the outer court to the people, they shall take off their garments in which they have ministered, leave them in the holy chambers, and put on other garments; and in their holy garments they shall not sanctify the people."

"They shall neither shave their heads nor let their hair grow long; but they shall keep their hair well trimmed. No priest shall drink wine when he enters the inner court. They shall not take as wife a widow or a divorced woman, but take virgins of the descendants of the house of Israel, or widows of priests. And they shall teach My people the difference between the holy and the unholy, and cause them to discern between the unclean and the clean. In controversy they shall stand as judges, and judge it according to My judgments. They shall keep My laws and My statutes in all My appointed meetings, and they shall hallow My Sabbaths. They shall not defile themselves by coming near a dead person. Only for father or mother, for son or daughter, for brother or unmarried sister may they defile them-

selves. After he is cleansed, they shall count seven days for him. And on the day that he goes to the sanctuary to minister in the sanctuary, he must offer his sin offering in the inner court,” says the Lord GOD.

“It shall be, in regard to their inheritance, that I am their inheritance. You shall give them no possession in Israel, for I am their possession. They shall eat the grain offering, the sin offering, and the trespass offering; every dedicated thing in Israel shall be theirs. The best of all firstfruits of any kind, and every sacrifice of any kind from all your sacrifices, shall be the priest’s; also you shall give to the priest the first of your ground meal, to cause a blessing to rest on your house. The priests shall not eat anything, bird or beast, that died naturally or was torn by wild beasts.”

Ezekiel 45, *“Moreover, when you divide the land by lot into inheritance, you shall set apart a district for the LORD, a holy section of the land; its length shall be twenty-five thousand cubits, and the width ten thousand. It shall be holy throughout its territory all around. Of this there shall be a square plot for the sanctuary, five hundred by five hundred rods, with fifty cubits around it for an open space. So this is the district you shall measure: twenty-five thousand cubits long and ten thousand wide; in it shall be the sanctuary, the Most Holy Place. It shall be a holy section of the land, belonging to the priests, the ministers of the sanctuary, who come near to minister to the LORD; it shall be a place for their houses and a holy place for the sanctuary. An area twenty-five thousand cubits long and ten thousand wide shall belong to the Levites, the ministers of the temple; they shall have twenty chambers as a possession.”*

“You shall appoint as the property of the city an area five thousand cubits wide and twenty-five thousand long, adjacent to the district of the holy section; it shall belong to the whole house of Israel. The prince shall have a section on one side and the other of the holy district and the city’s property; and bordering on the holy district and the city’s property, extending westward on the west side and eastward on the east side, the length shall be side by side with one of the tribal portions, from the west border to the east border. The land shall be his possession in Israel; and My princes shall no more oppress My people, but they shall give the rest of the land to the house of Israel, according to their tribes.”

Thus says the Lord GOD: “Enough, O princes of Israel! Remove violence and plundering, execute justice and righteousness, and stop dispossessing My people, says the Lord GOD. You shall have honest scales, an honest ephah, and an honest bath. The ephah and the bath shall be of the same measure, so that the bath contains one-tenth of a homer, and the ephah one-tenth of a homer; their measure shall be according to the homer. The shekel shall be twenty gerahs; twenty shekels, twenty-five shekels, and fifteen shekels shall be your mina.”

My spirit is telling me that we are dealing with prophecy and have one of those situations that represents two time periods. In the second paragraph above we once again see the noun prince having a section of land and the pronoun his indicates this is the possession of the prince in Israel. Then immediately following the semicolon we have a different type of statement. It would seem that this is God speaking and making the statement that, *My princes shall no more oppress My people*. This continues in the paragraph just above with God saying, *Enough, O princes of Israel!* God is pointing out some of what He didn’t like about the old Israel that He divorced because of their idolatry, greed and dishonesty. That is one time period being represented in this prophecy from Ezekiel. The kings of Israel (the Northern Kingdom) reigned in a feudal system. A prince may be a future king and there were many kings of Israel. God did not find pleasure in any of the kings and all led the people to sin. The other time period of the prophecy is the future where Jesus shall reign and the system will be just, orderly and the worship of

God will be in the manner God desires to be worshiped. These verses in Ezekiel are illustrating what Israel has forgotten and how they must be instructed once again in God's Law, manner of worship at the temple, and how to conduct their ways in an honest manner.

"This is the offering which you shall offer: you shall give one-sixth of an ephah from a homer of wheat, and one-sixth of an ephah from a homer of barley. The ordinance concerning oil, the bath of oil, is one-tenth of a bath from a kor. A kor is a homer or ten baths, for ten baths are a homer. And one lamb shall be given from a flock of two hundred, from the rich pastures of Israel. These shall be for grain offerings, burnt offerings, and peace offerings, to make atonement for them," says the Lord GOD.

"All the people of the land shall give this offering for the prince in Israel. Then it shall be the prince's part to give burnt offerings, grain offerings, and drink offerings, at the feasts, the New Moons, the Sabbaths, and at all the appointed seasons of the house of Israel. He shall prepare the sin offering, the grain offering, the burnt offering, and the peace offerings to make atonement for the house of Israel." (In these verses, and those in chapter 46, the prince is a representative of the people of all Israel.)

"Thus says the Lord GOD: In the first month, on the first day of the month, you shall take a young bull without blemish and cleanse the sanctuary. The priest shall take some of the blood of the sin offering and put it on the doorposts of the temple, on the four corners of the ledge of the altar, and on the gateposts of the gate of the inner court. And so you shall do on the seventh day of the month for everyone who has sinned unintentionally or in ignorance. Thus you shall make atonement for the temple."

"In the first month, on the fourteenth day of the month, you shall observe the Passover, a feast of seven days; unleavened bread shall be eaten. And on that day the prince shall prepare for himself and for all the people of the land a bull for a sin offering. On the seven days of the feast he shall prepare a burnt offering to the LORD, seven bulls and seven rams without blemish, daily for seven days, and a kid of the goats daily for a sin offering. And he shall prepare a grain offering of one ephah for each bull and one ephah for each ram, together with a hin of oil for each ephah. In the seventh month, on the fifteenth day of the month, at the feast, he shall do likewise for seven days, according to the sin offering, the burnt offering, the grain offering, and the oil."

Ezekiel 46, Thus says the Lord GOD: "The gateway of the inner court that faces toward the east shall be shut the six working days; but on the Sabbath it shall be opened, and on the day of the New Moon it shall be opened. The prince shall enter by way of the vestibule of the gateway from the outside, and stand by the gatepost. The priests shall prepare his burnt offering and his peace offerings. He shall worship at the threshold of the gate. Then he shall go out, but the gate shall not be shut until evening. Likewise the people of the land shall worship at the entrance to this gateway before the LORD on the Sabbaths and the New Moons."

"The burnt offering that the prince offers to the LORD on the Sabbath day shall be six lambs without blemish, and a ram without blemish; and the grain offering shall be one ephah for a ram, and the grain offering for the lambs, as much as he wants to give, as well as a hin of oil with every ephah. On the day of the New Moon it shall be a young bull without blemish, six lambs, and a ram; they shall be without blemish. He shall prepare a grain offering of an ephah for a bull, an ephah for a ram, as much as he wants to give for the lambs, and a hin of oil with every ephah. When the prince enters, he shall go in by way of the vestibule of the gateway, and go out the same way. But when the people of the land come before the LORD on the appointed feast days, whoever enters by way of the north gate to worship shall go out by way of the south gate; and whoever enters by way of the south gate shall go out by way of the north gate. He shall not return by way of the gate through which he came, but shall go out through the opposite gate."

“The prince shall then be in their midst. When they go in, he shall go in; and when they go out, he shall go out. At the festivals and the appointed feast days the grain offering shall be an ephah for a bull, an ephah for a ram, as much as he wants to give for the lambs, and a hin of oil with every ephah. Now when the prince makes a voluntary burnt offering or voluntary peace offering to the LORD, the gate that faces toward the east shall then be opened for him; and he shall prepare his burnt offering and his peace offerings as he did on the Sabbath day. Then he shall go out, and after he goes out the gate shall be shut. You shall daily make a burnt offering to the LORD of a lamb of the first year without blemish; you shall prepare it every morning. And you shall prepare a grain offering with it every morning, a sixth of an ephah, and a third of a hin of oil to moisten the fine flour. This grain offering is a perpetual ordinance, to be made regularly to the LORD. Thus they shall prepare the lamb, the grain offering, and the oil, as a regular burnt offering every morning.”

Thus says the Lord GOD: “If the prince gives a gift of some of his inheritance to any of his sons, it shall belong to his sons; it is their possession by inheritance. But if he gives a gift of some of his inheritance to one of his servants, it shall be his until the year of liberty, after which it shall return to the prince. But his inheritance shall belong to his sons; it shall become theirs. Moreover the prince shall not take any of the people’s inheritance by evicting them from their property; he shall provide an inheritance for his sons from his own property, so that none of My people may be scattered from his property.” (The rules of inheritance shall apply toward all Israel.)

“Now he brought me through the entrance, which was at the side of the gate, into the holy chambers of the priests which face toward the north; and there a place was situated at their extreme western end. And he said to me, ‘This is the place where the priests shall boil the trespass offering and the sin offering, and where they shall bake the grain offering, so that they do not bring them out into the outer court to sanctify the people.’ Then he brought me out into the outer court and caused me to pass by the four corners of the court; and in fact, in every corner of the court there was another court. In the four corners of the court were enclosed courts, forty cubits long and thirty wide; all four corners were the same size. There was a row of building stones all around in them, all around the four of them; and cooking hearths were made under the rows of stones all around. And he said to me, ‘These are the kitchens where the ministers of the temple shall boil the sacrifices of the people.’”

Ezekiel 47, Then he brought me back to the door of the temple; and there was water, flowing from under the threshold of the temple toward the east, for the front of the temple faced east; the water was flowing from under the right side of the temple, south of the altar. He brought me out by way of the north gate, and led me around on the outside to the outer gateway that faces east; and there was water, running out on the right side. And when the man went out to the east with the line in his hand, he measured one thousand cubits, and he brought me through the waters; the water came up to my ankles. Again he measured one thousand and brought me through the waters; the water came up to my knees. Again he measured one thousand and brought me through; the water came up to my waist. Again he measured one thousand, and it was a river that I could not cross; for the water was too deep, water in which one must swim, a river that could not be crossed. He said to me, “Son of man, have you seen this?”

Then he brought me and returned me to the bank of the river. When I returned, there, along the bank of the river, were very many trees on one side and the other. Then he said to me: “This water flows toward the eastern region, goes down into the valley, and enters the sea. When it reaches the sea, its waters are healed. And it shall be that every living thing that moves, wherever the rivers go, will live. There will be a very great multitude of fish, because these waters go there; for they will be healed, and everything will live wherever the river goes. It shall be that fishermen will stand by it from En Gedi to En Eglaim; they will be places for spreading their nets. Their fish will be of the same kinds as the fish of the Great Sea, exceedingly many. But its swamps and marshes will not be healed; they will be given

over to salt. Along the bank of the river, on this side and that, will grow all kinds of trees used for food; their leaves will not wither, and their fruit will not fail. They will bear fruit every month, because their water flows from the sanctuary. Their fruit will be for food, and their leaves for medicine.

This almost sounds like the river of life that is spoken of in Revelation 21 that runs through the New Jerusalem. Notice that this river runs from the temple to the Great Sea (Mediterranean Sea). Presently the Dead Sea is the stopping point of water running through the Jordan Valley. This is due to the placement of the Dead Sea at 1320 feet below sea level. There is no life in the Dead Sea and further south is the Wilderness of Zin and the Negev. It certainly sounds like all this will be changed to the Land of Milk and Honey.

*Thus says the Lord GOD: “These are the borders by which you shall divide the land as an inheritance among the twelve tribes of Israel. **Joseph shall have two portions.** You shall inherit it equally with one another; for I raised My hand in an oath to give it to your fathers, and this land shall fall to you as your inheritance. This shall be the border of the land on the north: from the Great Sea, by the road to Hethlon, as one goes to Zedad, Hamath, Berothah, Sibram (which is between the border of Damascus and the border of Hamath), to Hazar Hatticon (which is on the border of Hauran). Thus the boundary shall be from the Sea to Hazar Enan, the border of Damascus; and as for the north, northward, it is the border of Hamath. This is the north side.”*

“On the east side you shall mark out the border from between Hauran and Damascus, and between Gilead and the land of Israel, along the Jordan, and along the eastern side of the sea. This is the east side. The south side, toward the South, shall be from Tamar to the waters of Meribah by Kadesh, along the brook to the Great Sea. This is the south side, toward the South. The west side shall be the Great Sea, from the southern boundary until one comes to a point opposite Hamath. This is the west side. Thus you shall divide this land among yourselves according to the tribes of Israel. It shall be that you will divide it by lot as an inheritance for yourselves, and for the strangers who dwell among you and who bear children among you. They shall be to you as native-born among the children of Israel; they shall have an inheritance with you among the tribes of Israel. And it shall be that in whatever tribe the stranger dwells, there you shall give him his inheritance,” says the Lord GOD.

Ezekiel 48, “Now these are the names of the tribes: from the northern border along the road to Hethlon at the entrance of Hamath, to Hazar Enan, the border of Damascus northward, in the direction of Hamath, there shall be one section for Dan from its east to its west side; by the border of Dan, from the east side to the west, one section for Asher; by the border of Asher, from the east side to the west, one section for Naphtali; by the border of Naphtali, from the east side to the west, one section for Manasseh; by the border of Manasseh, from the east side to the west, one section for Ephraim; by the border of Ephraim, from the east side to the west, one section for Reuben; by the border of Reuben, from the east side to the west, one section for Judah; by the border of Judah, from the east side to the west, shall be the district which you shall set apart, twenty-five thousand cubits in width, and in length the same as one of the other portions, from the east side to the west, with the sanctuary in the center.”

“The district that you shall set apart for the LORD shall be twenty-five thousand cubits in length and ten thousand in width. To these; to the priests; the holy district shall belong: on the north twenty-five thousand cubits in length, on the west ten thousand in width, on the east ten thousand in width, and on the south twenty-five thousand in length. The sanctuary of the LORD shall be in the center. It shall be for the priests of the sons of Zadok, who are sanctified, who have kept My charge, who did not go astray when the children of Israel went astray, as the Levites went astray. And this district of land that is set apart shall be to them a thing most holy by the border of the Levites. Opposite the border of the priests, the Levites shall have an area twenty-five thousand cubits in length and ten thousand in width; its entire length shall be twenty-five thousand and its width ten thousand. And they

shall not sell or exchange any of it; they may not alienate this best part of the land, for it is holy to the LORD.”

“The five thousand cubits in width that remain, along the edge of the twenty-five thousand, shall be for general use by the city, for dwellings and common-land; and the city shall be in the center. These shall be its measurements: the north side four thousand five hundred cubits, the south side four thousand five hundred, the east side four thousand five hundred, and the west side four thousand five hundred. The common-land of the city shall be: to the north two hundred and fifty cubits, to the south two hundred and fifty, to the east two hundred and fifty, and to the west two hundred and fifty.”

“The rest of the length, alongside the district of the holy section, shall be ten thousand cubits to the east and ten thousand to the west. It shall be adjacent to the district of the holy section, and its produce shall be food for the workers of the city. The workers of the city, from all the tribes of Israel, shall cultivate it.”

“The entire district shall be twenty-five thousand cubits by twenty-five thousand cubits, four-square. You shall set apart the holy district with the property of the city. The rest shall belong to the prince, on one side and on the other of the holy district and of the city’s property, next to the twenty-five thousand cubits of the holy district as far as the eastern border, and westward next to the twenty-five thousand as far as the western border, adjacent to the tribal portions; it shall belong to the prince. It shall be the holy district, and the sanctuary of the temple shall be in the center.”

“Moreover, apart from the possession of the Levites and the possession of the city which are in the midst of what belongs to the prince, the area between the border of Judah and the border of Benjamin shall belong to the prince. As for the rest of the tribes, from the east side to the west, Benjamin shall have one section; by the border of Benjamin, from the east side to the west, Simeon shall have one section; by the border of Simeon, from the east side to the west, Issachar shall have one section; by the border of Issachar, from the east side to the west, Zebulun shall have one section; by the border of Zebulun, from the east side to the west, Gad shall have one section; by the border of Gad, on the south side, toward the South, the border shall be from Tamar to the waters of Meribah by Kadesh, along the brook to the Great Sea.”

“This is the land which you shall divide by lot as an inheritance among the tribes of Israel, and these are their portions,” says the Lord GOD. “These are the exits of the city. On the north side, measuring four thousand five hundred cubits (the gates of the city shall be named after the tribes of Israel), the three gates northward: one gate for Reuben, one gate for Judah, and one gate for Levi; on the east side, four thousand five hundred cubits, three gates: one gate for Joseph, one gate for Benjamin, and one gate for Dan; on the south side, measuring four thousand five hundred cubits, three gates: one gate for Simeon, one gate for Issachar, and one gate for Zebulun; on the west side, four thousand five hundred cubits with their three gates: one gate for Gad, one gate for Asher, and one gate for Naphtali. All the way around shall be eighteen thousand cubits; and the name of the city from that day shall be: **THE LORD IS THERE.**”

Why would it be necessary to include these nine chapters from the book of Ezekiel? The straight forward answer is that the kingdom period will involve a temple and there will be sacrifices made at this temple. Here’s an important part that many who call themselves Christian do not seem to understand, nor, it appears, do they want to understand. Jesus (Joshua, Messiah or Christ) will be in charge! People alive at that time will not be living under the leadership of a dictator, nor will they be living in a republic, or under a democracy; **all will be living under the theocracy of Christ.**

The importance of these first thirty days is the preparation and cleansing of the temple. Let us all remember that the temple was desecrated at the midpoint of the Tribulation. Daniel 9:27, *Then he shall confirm a covenant with many for one week; but in the middle of the week He shall bring an end*

to sacrifice and offering. And on the wing of abominations shall be one who makes desolate, even until the consummation, which is determined, is poured out on the desolate.

Daniel 11:31, “And forces shall be mustered by him, and they shall defile the sanctuary fortress; then they shall take away the daily sacrifices, and place there the abomination of desolation.”

Daniel 12:11, “And from the time that the daily sacrifice is taken away, and the abomination of desolation is set up, there shall be one thousand two hundred and ninety days.”

Matthew 24:15, “Therefore when you see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place” (whoever reads, let him understand).

Jesus (Messiah) needs to cleanse the temple, this is completed in this first thirty day period and prior to Messiah sitting on the throne of David. Matthew 25:31 NIV, “When the Son of Man comes in his glory, and all the angels with him, he will sit on his throne in heavenly glory.”

That explains the first thirty day period and prepares the temple for Joshua to *sit on his throne in heavenly glory*. The first thing that will be done is the judgement of the nations. Matthew 25:32-33, “All the nations will be gathered before Him, and He will separate them one from another, as a shepherd divides his sheep from the goats. And He will set the sheep on His right hand, but the goats on the left.” The sheep nations are those who befriend and assist Israel during the Tribulation and the goat nations are those who sit on the sideline and do nothing to help Israel.

Matthew 25:34-46, “Then the King will say to those on His right hand, ‘Come, you blessed of My Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: for I was hungry and you gave Me food; I was thirsty and you gave Me drink; I was a stranger and you took Me in; I was naked and you clothed Me; I was sick and you visited Me; I was in prison and you came to Me.’”

“Then the righteous will answer Him, saying, ‘Lord, when did we see You hungry and feed You, or thirsty and give You drink? When did we see You a stranger and take You in, or naked and clothe You? Or when did we see You sick, or in prison, and come to You?’”

“And the King will answer and say to them, ‘Assuredly, I say to you, inasmuch as you did it to one of the least of these My brethren, you did it to Me.’ Then He will also say to those on the left hand, ‘Depart from Me, you cursed, into the everlasting fire prepared for the devil and his angels: for I was hungry and you gave Me no food; I was thirsty and you gave Me no drink; I was a stranger and you did not take Me in, naked and you did not clothe Me, sick and in prison and you did not visit Me.’”

“Then they also will answer Him, saying, ‘Lord, when did we see You hungry or thirsty or a stranger or naked or sick or in prison, and did not minister to You?’ Then He will answer them, saying, ‘Assuredly, I say to you, inasmuch as you did not do it to one of the least of these, you did not do it to Me.’ And these will go away into everlasting punishment, but the righteous into eternal life.”

Now, you may ask if these are nations why concern ourselves with individuals. The answer is that there is no nation without it being, and meaning, people for there is no such thing as a nation without people; people represent the nation and are the nation, therefore, we are seeing a sorting out of peoples. The result of this judging is shown in Matthew 25:34, “Then the King will say to those on His right hand, ‘Come, you blessed of My Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world.’” Now, this all takes place during the second interval of time, the 45 days that Daniel speaks of reaching to 1,335 days.

I’ll make this as clear as I can. Those who speak out against Israel are speaking out against God and represent goat nations. Those nations will be placed on the left hand of Messiah and will be cast into everlasting punishment. That’s Hell folks! The beginning of the Millennial Age will represent believers of Christ only! The actual beginning of the Millennial Age will not start until after the judgement of the nations and that will be completed on the 1,335 day after the midpoint of the Tribulation. Matthew 24:13, “But he who endures to the end shall be saved.” This is the end of which Christ is speaking.

Let's return to Ezekiel for the moment. In this work I have attempted to show the importance of understanding the history of Israel and the importance of comprehending the necessity of obeying God's Sabbath days. I have been told that I am foolish for stating these things because today we live under the New Covenant and there is no Sabbath, instead The Lord's Day. Well I certainly think differently and believe that prophecy will show this to anyone who would take the time to read this book or their Bible. To everyone who makes the claim that they are under the New Covenant and don't have to do these things, let me ask this question: Who does the Bible say will judge along with Christ during this period? Isn't it the church? Then contrary to some beliefs, don't you think that you will be judging according to Messiah's guidelines and **not your man made traditions?**

If you have the God given grace to understand even the smallest thing you can take God's book and read for yourself that there will be guidelines set by Christ. Again, I ask, do you really believe that Messiah will establish one set of rules for Israel and another set for all the sheep nations? You have read time-and-again that Christians are coheirs with Christ and the grafted in children of God. Don't you understand that as such, during the Kingdom reign, there will be one set of rules? Wouldn't it make sense to you that born again Christians who are now asleep in Christ are learning about this from Christ in paradise. We who are now the living portion of the church (that's the true church and not everyone who goes to a building on a particular day of the week) should set our mind and our heart to understand the Will of God and know when His Sabbaths are and be prepared to observe them.

Furthermore, the believers who enter the Kingdom period, both Jew and Gentile will be instructed in the observance of God's Sabbaths. I know, many of you don't believe this. I ask you to return to the book of Ezekiel to see the importance of these days. Once again, I included the entire chapters from 40 through 48. Go and read once more from chapter 45. Here are the verses so you don't have to flip back any pages to see what it says.

Ezekiel 45:18, *Thus says the Lord GOD: "In the first month, on the first day of the month, you shall take a young bull without blemish and cleanse the sanctuary."*

Verse 20, *"And so you shall do on the seventh day of the month for everyone who has sinned unintentionally or in ignorance. Thus you shall make atonement for the temple."*

Verse 21, *"In the first month, on the fourteenth day of the month, you shall observe the Passover, a feast of seven days; unleavened bread shall be eaten."*

Verse 25, *"In the seventh month, on the fifteenth day of the month, at the feast, he shall do likewise for seven days, according to the sin offering, the burnt offering, the grain offering, and the oil."*

This is continued into chapter 46 with the following verse: Ezekiel 46:1, *Thus says the Lord GOD: "The gateway of the inner court that faces toward the east shall be shut the six working days; but on the Sabbath it shall be opened, and on the day of the New Moon it shall be opened."* Contrary to everyone that has stated that Christians are to worship on Sunday, the Lord's Day, in the Millennial Kingdom of Christ (that means the Lord's Kingdom) **the day of worship will be the Sabbath** and not the so called Lord's Day. Everyone who uses this term still does not understand who Christ is.

Look at the following: Mark 2:27-28, *And He said to them, "The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath. Therefore the Son of Man is also Lord of the Sabbath."*

Luke 6:5, *And He said to them, "The Son of Man is also Lord of the Sabbath."*

Exodus 31:13-17, *Speak also to the children of Israel, saying: "Surely My Sabbaths you shall keep, for it is a sign between Me and you throughout your generations, that you may know that I am the LORD who sanctifies you. You shall keep the Sabbath, therefore, for it is holy to you. Everyone who profanes it shall surely be put to death; for whoever does any work on it, that person shall be cut off from among his people. Work shall be done for six days, but the seventh is the Sabbath of rest, holy to the LORD. Whoever does any work on the Sabbath day, he shall surely be put to death. Therefore the*

children of Israel shall keep the Sabbath, to observe the Sabbath throughout their generations as a perpetual covenant. It is a sign between Me and the children of Israel forever; for in six days the LORD made the heavens and the earth, and on the seventh day He rested and was refreshed.”

Christ is the *Lord of the Sabbath*, or to put it another way, the *Sabbath* is the Lord's Day. To everyone who believes in Christ as the Son of God you had better get away from all this false religion of tradition and get back to the basics of what God Himself has instructed.

To all of those who oppose this thought because it was given to Israel and not to the Church you fail to understand what the Apostle to the Gentiles (Paul) said concerning the grafting in of the wild olive shoot and the olive tree root. Romans 11, *I say then, has God cast away His people? Certainly not! For I also am an Israelite, of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin. God has not cast away His people whom He foreknew. Or do you not know what the Scripture says of Elijah, how he pleads with God against Israel, saying, “LORD, they have killed Your prophets and torn down Your altars, and I alone am left, and they seek my life”?*

But what does the divine response say to him? “I have reserved for Myself seven thousand men who have not bowed the knee to Baal.” Even so then, at this present time there is a remnant according to the election of grace. And if by grace, then it is no longer of works; otherwise grace is no longer grace. But if it is of works, it is no longer grace; otherwise work is no longer work. What then? Israel has not obtained what it seeks; but the elect have obtained it, and the rest were blinded.

Just as it is written: “God has given them a spirit of stupor, eyes that they should not see and ears that they should not hear, to this very day.”

And David says: “Let their table become a snare and a trap, a stumbling block and a recompense to them. Let their eyes be darkened, so that they do not see, and bow down their back always.” I say then, have they stumbled that they should fall? Certainly not! But through their fall, to provoke them to jealousy, salvation has come to the Gentiles. Now if their fall is riches for the world, and their failure riches for the Gentiles, how much more their fullness! For I speak to you Gentiles; inasmuch as I am an apostle to the Gentiles, I magnify my ministry, if by any means I may provoke to jealousy those who are my flesh and save some of them. For if their being cast away is the reconciling of the world, what will their acceptance be but life from the dead?

For if the firstfruit is holy, the lump is also holy; and if the root is holy, so are the branches. And if some of the branches were broken off, and you, being a wild olive tree, were grafted in among them, and with them became a partaker of the root and fatness of the olive tree, do not boast against the branches. But if you do boast, remember that you do not support the root, but the root supports you. You will say then, “Branches were broken off that I might be grafted in.” Well said. Because of unbelief they were broken off, and you stand by faith. Do not be haughty, but fear. For if God did not spare the natural branches, He may not spare you either.

Therefore consider the goodness and severity of God: on those who fell, severity; but toward you, goodness, if you continue in His goodness. Otherwise you also will be cut off. And they also, if they do not continue in unbelief, will be grafted in, for God is able to graft them in again. For if you were cut out of the olive tree which is wild by nature, and were grafted contrary to nature into a cultivated olive tree, how much more will these, who are natural branches, be grafted into their own olive tree?

For I do not desire, brethren, that you should be ignorant of this mystery, lest you should be wise in your own opinion, that blindness in part has happened to Israel until the fullness of the Gentiles has come in. And so all Israel will be saved, as it is written: “The Deliverer will come out of Zion, and He will turn away ungodliness from Jacob; for this is My covenant with them, when I take away their sins.”

Concerning the gospel they are enemies for your sake, but concerning the election they are beloved for the sake of the fathers. For the gifts and the calling of God are irrevocable. For as you were

once disobedient to God, yet have now obtained mercy through their disobedience, even so these also have now been disobedient, that through the mercy shown you they also may obtain mercy. For God has committed them all to disobedience, that He might have mercy on all.

Oh, the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! How unsearchable are His judgments and His ways past finding out! “For who has known the mind of the LORD? Or who has become His counselor? Or who has first given to Him and it shall be repaid to him?” For of Him and through Him and to Him are all things, to whom be glory forever. Amen.

To those denominations who want to call themselves the New Israel I suggest you refrain from such. To those denominations that desire to save Israel into their brand of Christianity I don't think you understand the consequences of such ideas. To those nations and organizations who want to impose their will upon Israel or declare that the Zionist must die you are placing burning coals upon your own head. To all who claim to know the Bible and worship on the Lord's Day I think you need to read the Word of God again. This time ask Him to open your eyes and let you see the truth.

All of these words may sound hard and callous and perhaps from someone who doesn't understand God, nor His Son. I seem to hear different words and march to a different drummer. I hear the words of a just God, the words of a God that demands justice, the words from a God that will cast out evil and cleanse the whole of His house prior to the eternity of a new earth and a new heaven and a new Jerusalem. I hear the words of a God who believes that discipline is part of love. I hear the words of a God who instructs all his creation to worship Him. I hear the words of a God who created all things to glorify His name.

If you believe that God is so loving that He will not punish, you are simply mistaken. You also failed to understand who I am. I am not some hard nosed know-it-all who is out to chastise you. I am a sinful man, just as you are, graced by God to understand these things and given the task, the love, the understanding to write this down and pass it on to those who God sends to receive it.

These are answers from a loving God who has taken me to the wood shed more than one time to instruct me in the finer points of knowledge. These are the questions that one individual has asked to God and the answers that have been returned. Matthew 7:7-9, *“Ask, and it will be given to you; seek, and you will find; knock, and it will be opened to you. **For everyone who asks receives, and he who seeks finds, and to him who knocks it will be opened. Or what man is there among you who, if his son asks for bread, will give him a stone?**”*

If there is anyone reading this work who doubts the fact that God will revert His Grace back to Israel during the Millennial Kingdom of Christ you must read the following verses from the prophet Ezekiel.

Ezekiel 11:19, *“Then I will give them one heart, and I will put a new spirit within them, and take the stony heart out of their flesh, and give them a heart of flesh.”*

Ezekiel 18:31, *“Cast away from you all the transgressions which you have committed, and get yourselves a new heart and a new spirit. For why should you die, O house of Israel?”*

Ezekiel 20:33-38, *“As I live,” says the Lord GOD, “surely with a mighty hand, with an outstretched arm, and with fury poured out, I will rule over you. I will bring you out from the peoples and gather you out of the countries where you are scattered, with a mighty hand, with an outstretched arm, and with fury poured out. And I will bring you into the wilderness of the peoples, and there I will plead My case with you face to face. Just as I pleaded My case with your fathers in the wilderness of the land of Egypt, so I will plead My case with you,” says the Lord GOD. “I will make you pass under the rod, and I will bring you into the bond of the covenant; I will purge the rebels from among you, and those who transgress against Me; I will bring them out of the country where they dwell, but they shall not enter the land of Israel. Then you will know that I am the LORD.”*

Ezekiel 36, “And you, son of man, prophesy to the mountains of Israel, and say, ‘O mountains of Israel, hear the word of the LORD!’ Thus says the Lord GOD: Because the enemy has said of you, ‘Aha! The ancient heights have become our possession,’ therefore prophesy, and say, ‘Thus says the Lord GOD: Because they made you desolate and swallowed you up on every side, so that you became the possession of the rest of the nations, and you are taken up by the lips of talkers and slandered by the people, therefore, O mountains of Israel, hear the word of the Lord GOD!’”

“Thus says the Lord GOD to the mountains, the hills, the rivers, the valleys, the desolate wastes, and the cities that have been forsaken, which became plunder and mockery to the rest of the nations all around; therefore thus says the Lord GOD: ‘Surely I have spoken in My burning jealousy against the rest of the nations and against all Edom, who gave My land to themselves as a possession, with wholehearted joy and spiteful minds, in order to plunder its open country.’”

“Therefore prophesy concerning the land of Israel, and say to the mountains, the hills, the rivers, and the valleys, ‘Thus says the Lord GOD: Behold, I have spoken in My jealousy and My fury, because you have borne the shame of the nations.’ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD: ‘I have raised My hand in an oath that surely the nations that are around you shall bear their own shame. But you, O mountains of Israel, you shall shoot forth your branches and yield your fruit to My people Israel, for they are about to come. For indeed I am for you, and I will turn to you, and you shall be tilled and sown. I will multiply men upon you, all the house of Israel, all of it; and the cities shall be inhabited and the ruins rebuilt. I will multiply upon you man and beast; and they shall increase and bear young; I will make you inhabited as in former times, and do better for you than at your beginnings. Then you shall know that I am the LORD.’”

“Yes, I will cause men to walk on you, My people Israel; they shall take possession of you, and you shall be their inheritance; no more shall you bereave them of children. Thus says the Lord GOD: ‘Because they say to you, you devour men and bereave your nation of children, therefore you shall devour men no more, nor bereave your nation anymore,’ says the Lord GOD. ‘Nor will I let you hear the taunts of the nations anymore, nor bear the reproach of the peoples anymore, nor shall you cause your nation to stumble anymore,’” says the Lord GOD.

Moreover the word of the LORD came to me, saying: “Son of man, when the house of Israel dwelt in their own land, they defiled it by their own ways and deeds; to Me their way was like the uncleanness of a woman in her customary impurity. Therefore I poured out My fury on them for the blood they had shed on the land, and for their idols with which they had defiled it. So I scattered them among the nations, and they were dispersed throughout the countries; I judged them according to their ways and their deeds.”

“When they came to the nations, wherever they went, they profaned My holy name; when they said of them, ‘These are the people of the LORD, and yet they have gone out of His land.’ But I had concern for My holy name, which the house of Israel had profaned among the nations wherever they went.”

“Therefore say to the house of Israel, ‘Thus says the Lord GOD: I do not do this for your sake, O house of Israel, but for My holy name’s sake, which you have profaned among the nations wherever you went. And I will sanctify My great name, which has been profaned among the nations, which you have profaned in their midst; and the nations shall know that I am the LORD,’ says the Lord GOD, ‘when I am hallowed in you before their eyes.’”

“For I will take you from among the nations, gather you out of all countries, and bring you into your own land. Then I will sprinkle clean water on you, and you shall be clean; I will cleanse you from all your filthiness and from all your idols. I will give you a new heart and put a new spirit within you; I will take the heart of stone out of your flesh and give you a heart of flesh. I will put My Spirit within you and cause you to walk in My statutes, and you will keep My judgments and do them. Then you shall dwell in the land that I gave to your fathers; you shall be My people, and I will be your God.”

“I will deliver you from all your uncleannesses. I will call for the grain and multiply it, and bring no famine upon you. And I will multiply the fruit of your trees and the increase of your fields, so that you need never again bear the reproach of famine among the nations. Then you will remember your evil ways and your deeds that were not good; and you will loathe yourselves in your own sight, for your iniquities and your abominations.”

“Not for your sake do I do this,” says the Lord GOD, “let it be known to you. Be ashamed and confounded for your own ways, O house of Israel! Thus says the Lord GOD: On the day that I cleanse you from all your iniquities, I will also enable you to dwell in the cities, and the ruins shall be rebuilt. The desolate land shall be tilled instead of lying desolate in the sight of all who pass by.”

“So they will say, ‘This land that was desolate has become like the garden of Eden; and the wasted, desolate, and ruined cities are now fortified and inhabited.’ Then the nations which are left all around you shall know that I, the LORD, have rebuilt the ruined places and planted what was desolate. I, the LORD, have spoken it, and I will do it. Thus says the Lord GOD: I will also let the house of Israel inquire of Me to do this for them: I will increase their men like a flock. Like a flock offered as holy sacrifices, like the flock at Jerusalem on its feast days, so shall the ruined cities be filled with flocks of men. Then they shall know that I am the LORD.’”

Ezekiel 37, “The hand of the LORD came upon me and brought me out in the Spirit of the LORD, and set me down in the midst of the valley; and it was full of bones. Then He caused me to pass by them all around, and behold, there were very many in the open valley; and indeed they were very dry. And He said to me, ‘Son of man, can these bones live?’”

So I answered, “O Lord GOD, You know.”

Again He said to me, “Prophecy to these bones, and say to them, ‘O dry bones, hear the word of the LORD! Thus says the Lord GOD to these bones: Surely I will cause breath to enter into you, and you shall live. I will put sinews on you and bring flesh upon you, cover you with skin and put breath in you; and you shall live. Then you shall know that I am the LORD.’”

“So I prophesied as I was commanded; and as I prophesied, there was a noise, and suddenly a rattling; and the bones came together, bone to bone. Indeed, as I looked, the sinews and the flesh came upon them, and the skin covered them over; but there was no breath in them.”

Also He said to me, “Prophecy to the breath, prophesy, son of man, and say to the breath, ‘Thus says the Lord GOD: Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe on these slain, that they may live.’”

“So I prophesied as He commanded me, and breath came into them, and they lived, and stood upon their feet, an exceedingly great army.”

Then He said to me, “Son of man, these bones are the whole house of Israel. They indeed say, ‘Our bones are dry, our hope is lost, and we ourselves are cut off!’”

“Therefore prophesy and say to them, ‘Thus says the Lord GOD: Behold, O My people, I will open your graves and cause you to come up from your graves, and bring you into the land of Israel. Then you shall know that I am the LORD, when I have opened your graves, O My people, and brought you up from your graves. I will put My Spirit in you, and you shall live, and I will place you in your own land. Then you shall know that I, the LORD, have spoken it and performed it,’ says the LORD.”

*Again the word of the LORD came to me, saying, “As for you, son of man, take a stick for yourself and write on it: **‘For Judah and for the children of Israel, his companions.**’ Then take another stick and write on it, **‘For Joseph, the stick of Ephraim, and for all the house of Israel, his companions.**’ Then join them one to another for yourself into one stick, and they will become one in your hand.”*

“And when the children of your people speak to you, saying, ‘Will you not show us what you mean by these?’; say to them, ‘Thus says the Lord GOD: Surely I will take the stick of Joseph, which is in the hand of Ephraim, and the tribes of Israel, his companions; and I will join them with it, with the stick of Judah, and make them one stick, and they will be one in My hand.’”

“And the sticks on which you write will be in your hand before their eyes. Then say to them, ‘Thus says the Lord GOD: Surely I will take the children of Israel from among the nations, wherever they have gone, and will gather them from every side and bring them into their own land; and I will make them one nation in the land, on the mountains of Israel; and one king shall be king over them all; they shall no longer be two nations, nor shall they ever be divided into two kingdoms again. They shall not defile themselves anymore with their idols, nor with their detestable things, nor with any of their transgressions; but I will deliver them from all their dwelling places in which they have sinned, and will cleanse them. Then they shall be My people, and I will be their God.’”

“David My servant shall be king over them, and they shall all have one shepherd; they shall also walk in My judgments and observe My statutes, and do them. Then they shall dwell in the land that I have given to Jacob My servant, where your fathers dwelt; and they shall dwell there, they, their children, and their children’s children, forever; and My servant David shall be their prince forever. Moreover I will make a covenant of peace with them, and it shall be an everlasting covenant with them; I will establish them and multiply them, and I will set My sanctuary in their midst forevermore. My tabernacle also shall be with them; indeed I will be their God, and they shall be My people. The nations also will know that I, the LORD, sanctify Israel, when My sanctuary is in their midst forevermore.”

In my search for God’s truth I have run across several viewpoints and in some even I fail to see the connection to what I seek. One such viewpoint is the concern for the United States of America in the last days, the Tribulation and the Millennial Kingdom. Within this viewpoint there is the statement that Great Britain represents the tribe of Ephraim and Manasseh represents the United States. If, just if, that is the case then every person in Great Britain and the United States (along with Canada and Australia/New Zealand) who is a believer could be considered the combined tribe of Joseph. If you look closely at verse 19 above: *“Say to them, ‘Thus says the Lord GOD: Surely I will take the stick of Joseph, which is in the hand of Ephraim, and the tribes of Israel, his companions; and I will join them with it, with the stick of Judah, and make them one stick, and they will be one in My hand.’”* If the two sticks are combined into one stick in God’s hand isn’t that one nation under one King? Can you see that there shall be one guideline set of rules at that time and the authority rests with Christ. Once again, I am going to state that there will not be two sets of rules; one set for Jews and one set for Gentiles. There will only be one set of rules—**God’s**.

Since we have brought up the question of the tribe of Joseph, i.e. Ephraim and Manasseh, in this study it would serve us to understand some of the land division that is made in chapter 48 of Ezekiel. Notice the division of the land in verses 1-28. The order given by tribe is Dan, Asher, Naphtali, Manasseh, Ephraim, Reuben, Judah, Benjamin, Simeon, Issachar, Zebulun and Gad. However, notice the names of the gates that shall be around the city in verses 30-34. They are, on the north: Reuben, Judah and Levi; on the east: Joseph, Benjamin and Dan; on the south: Simeon, Issachar and Zebulun; and, on the west: Gad, Asher and Naphtali. If we truly accept that the nations of the world are blessed by Abraham and go back to some of the discussion given at that point, then we must consider that the Scandinavian countries, along with Ireland would make up much of the tribe of Dan. Judah would also include part of England and Scotland, and vast portions of Europe would be the descendants of various tribes. Greece, and believers in Turkey, would include part of the tribe of Benjamin. Now, I can’t say that any of this is to be, or that it is not to be. I am not a prophet, instead only a man who is passing the information of which I have been granted an understanding. Once again, if, just if, this is so then it would seem that the remnant of mankind after the Tribulation may well possibly live in the area of land defined in Ezekiel 48 as one nation.

What is it that we should know about Israel during the Millennial Kingdom? Shouldn’t we understand what prophecy says about Israel at this time? Let’s look at different passages. Along the way we may well find out some things about life in general during the reign of Christ.

Facts about the Millennial Age

Israel During the Kingdom Reign

● There will be a Regeneration of Israel — Jeremiah 31:31-34, “Behold, the days are coming, says the LORD, when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah; not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day that I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt, My covenant which they broke, though I was a husband to them, says the LORD. But this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, says the LORD: I will put My law in their minds, and write it on their hearts; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people. No more shall every man teach his neighbor, and every man his brother, saying, ‘Know the LORD,’ for they all shall know Me, from the least of them to the greatest of them, says the LORD. For I will forgive their iniquity, and their sin I will remember no more.”

● There will be a regathering of Israel — Deuteronomy 30:1-10, “Now it shall come to pass, when all these things come upon you, the blessing and the curse which I have set before you, and you call them to mind among all the nations where the LORD your God drives you, and you return to the LORD your God and obey His voice, according to all that I command you today, you and your children, with all your heart and with all your soul, that the LORD your God will bring you back from captivity, and have compassion on you, and gather you again from all the nations where the LORD your God has scattered you. If any of you are driven out to the farthest parts under heaven, from there the LORD your God will gather you, and from there He will bring you. Then the LORD your God will bring you to the land which your fathers possessed, and you shall possess it. He will prosper you and multiply you more than your fathers.”

“And the LORD your God will circumcise your heart and the heart of your descendants, to love the LORD your God with all your heart and with all your soul, that you may live. Also the LORD your God will put all these curses on your enemies and on those who hate you, who persecuted you. And you will again obey the voice of the LORD and do all His commandments which I command you today. The LORD your God will make you abound in all the work of your hand, in the fruit of your body, in the increase of your livestock, and in the produce of your land for good. For the LORD will again rejoice over you for good as He rejoiced over your fathers, if you obey the voice of the LORD your God, to keep His commandments and His statutes which are written in this Book of the Law, and if you turn to the LORD your God with all your heart and with all your soul.”

Isaiah 11:11-12:6, It shall come to pass in that day that the LORD shall set His hand again the second time to recover the remnant of His people who are left, from Assyria and Egypt, from Pathros and Cush, from Elam and Shinar, from Hamath and **the islands of the sea.** He will set up a banner for the nations, and will assemble the outcasts of Israel, and gather together the dispersed of Judah from the four corners of the earth.

Also the envy of Ephraim shall depart, and the adversaries of Judah shall be cut off; Ephraim shall not envy Judah, and Judah shall not harass Ephraim. But they shall fly down upon the shoulder of the Philistines toward the west; together they shall plunder the people of the East; they shall lay their hand on Edom and Moab; and the people of Ammon shall obey them. The LORD will utterly destroy the tongue of the Sea of Egypt; with His mighty wind He will shake His fist over the River, and strike it in the seven streams, and make men cross over dry-shod.

There will be a highway for the remnant of His people who will be left from Assyria, as it was for Israel in the day that he came up from the land of Egypt. And in that day you will say: "O LORD, I will praise You; though You were angry with me, Your anger is turned away, and You comfort me. Behold, God is my salvation, I will trust and not be afraid; 'For YAH (Jehovah), the LORD, is my strength and song; He also has become my salvation.'"

Therefore with joy you will draw water from the wells of salvation. And in that day you will say: "Praise the LORD, call upon His name; declare His deeds among the peoples, make mention that His name is exalted. Sing to the LORD, for He has done excellent things; this is known in all the earth. Cry out and shout, O inhabitant of Zion, for great is the Holy One of Israel in your midst!"

Matthew 24:31, "And He will send His angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they will gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other."

● *Israel's possession of land — Ezekiel 20:42-44, "Then you shall know that I am the LORD, when I bring you into the land of Israel, into the country for which I raised My hand in an oath to give to your fathers. And there you shall remember your ways and all your doings with which you were defiled; and you shall loathe yourselves in your own sight because of all the evils that you have committed. Then you shall know that I am the LORD, when I have dealt with you for My name's sake, not according to your wicked ways nor according to your corrupt doings, O house of Israel," says the Lord GOD.*

Ezekiel 36:28-38, "Then you shall dwell in the land that I gave to your fathers; you shall be My people, and I will be your God. I will deliver you from all your uncleannesses. I will call for the grain and multiply it, and bring no famine upon you. And I will multiply the fruit of your trees and the increase of your fields, so that you need never again bear the reproach of famine among the nations."

"Then you will remember your evil ways and your deeds that were not good; and you will loathe yourselves in your own sight, for your iniquities and your abominations. Not for your sake do I do this," says the Lord GOD, "let it be known to you. Be ashamed and confounded for your own ways, O house of Israel!" Thus says the Lord GOD: "On the day that I cleanse you from all your iniquities, I will also enable you to dwell in the cities, and the ruins shall be rebuilt. The desolate land shall be tilled instead of lying desolate in the sight of all who pass by."

So they will say, "This land that was desolate has become like the garden of Eden; and the wasted, desolate, and ruined cities are now fortified and inhabited."

"Then the nations which are left all around you shall know that I, the LORD, have rebuilt the ruined places and planted what was desolate. I, the LORD, have spoken it, and I will do it." Thus says the Lord GOD: "I will also let the house of Israel inquire of Me to do this for them: I will increase their men like a flock. Like a flock offered as holy sacrifices, like the flock at Jerusalem on its feast days, so shall the ruined cities be filled with flocks of men. Then they shall know that I am the LORD."

● *Throne of David reestablished — 2 Samuel 7:11-16, "Since the time that I commanded judges to be over My people Israel, and have caused you to rest from all your enemies. Also the LORD tells you that He will make you a house. When your days are fulfilled and you rest with your fathers, I will set up your seed after you, who will come from your body, and I will establish his kingdom. He shall build a house for My name, and I will establish the throne of his kingdom forever. I will be his Father, and he shall be My son. If he commits iniquity, I will chasten him with the rod of men and with the blows of the sons of men. But My mercy shall not depart from him, as I took it from Saul, whom I removed from before you. And your house and your kingdom shall be established forever before you. Your throne shall be established forever."*

1 Chronicles 17:10-14, "Since the time that I commanded judges to be over My people Israel. Also I will subdue all your enemies. Furthermore I tell you that the LORD will build you a house. And

it shall be, when your days are fulfilled, when you must go to be with your fathers, that I will set up your seed after you, who will be of your sons; and I will establish his kingdom. He shall build Me a house, and I will establish his throne forever. I will be his Father, and he shall be My son; and I will not take My mercy away from him, as I took it from him who was before you. {And I will establish him in My house and in My kingdom forever; and his throne shall be established forever.}

(Notice: Any time you have almost the same statement from two different writers or speakers in the Bible you have come across one of God's cardinal rules or truths. The statement is true and follows the intent of the Law by having two witnesses (writers or speakers).)

Jeremiah 33:17-26, *"For thus says the LORD: 'David shall never lack a man to sit on the throne of the house of Israel; nor shall the priests, the Levites, lack a man to offer burnt offerings before Me, to kindle grain offerings, and to sacrifice continually.'"*

And the word of the LORD came to Jeremiah, saying, "Thus says the LORD: 'If you can break My covenant with the day and My covenant with the night, so that there will not be day and night in their season, then My covenant may also be broken with David My servant, so that he shall not have a son to reign on his throne, and with the Levites, the priests, My ministers. As the host of heaven cannot be numbered, nor the sand of the sea measured, so will I multiply the descendants of David My servant and the Levites who minister to Me.'"

Moreover the word of the LORD came to Jeremiah, saying, "Have you not considered what these people have spoken, saying, 'The two families which the LORD has chosen, He has also cast them off'? Thus they have despised My people, as if they should no more be a nation before them."

"Thus says the LORD: 'If My covenant is not with day and night, and if I have not appointed the ordinances of heaven and earth, then I will cast away the descendants of Jacob and David My servant, so that I will not take any of his descendants to be rulers over the descendants of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. For I will cause their captives to return, and will have mercy on them.'"

● **Reign of Messiah (Christ)** — Isaiah 2:3-4, *Many people shall come and say, "Come, and let us go up to the mountain of the LORD, to the house of the God of Jacob; He will teach us His ways, and we shall walk in His paths." For out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of the LORD from Jerusalem. He shall judge between the nations, and rebuke many people; they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruning hooks; nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war anymore.*

Isaiah 11:2-5, *The Spirit of the LORD shall rest upon Him, The Spirit of wisdom and understanding, the Spirit of counsel and might, the Spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the LORD. His delight is in the fear of the LORD, and He shall not judge by the sight of His eyes, nor decide by the hearing of His ears; but with righteousness He shall judge the poor, and decide with equity for the meek of the earth; He shall strike the earth with the rod of His mouth, and with the breath of His lips He shall slay the wicked. Righteousness shall be the belt of His loins, and faithfulness the belt of His waist.*

Revelation 20:4-6, *And I saw thrones, and they sat on them, and judgment was committed to them. Then I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded for their witness to Jesus and for the word of God, who had not worshiped the beast or his image, and had not received his mark on their foreheads or on their hands. And they lived and reigned with Christ for a thousand years. But the rest of the dead did not live again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection. Blessed and holy is he who has part in the first resurrection. Over such the second death has no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with Him a thousand years.*

● **Loosing and final rebellion of Satan** — Revelation 20:7-10, *Now when the thousand years have expired, Satan will be released from his prison and will go out to deceive the nations which are in*

the four corners of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle, whose number is as the sand of the sea. They went up on the breadth of the earth and surrounded the camp of the saints and the beloved city. And fire came down from God out of heaven and devoured them. The devil, who deceived them, was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone where the beast and the false prophet are. And they will be tormented day and night forever and ever.

● **Great White Throne Judgement** — Revelation 20:11-15, *Then I saw a great white throne and Him who sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away. And there was found no place for them. And I saw the dead, small and great, standing before God, and books were opened. And another book was opened, which is the Book of Life. And the dead were judged according to their works, by the things which were written in the books. The sea gave up the dead who were in it, and Death and Hades delivered up the dead who were in them. And they were judged, each one according to his works. Then Death and Hades were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. And anyone not found written in the Book of Life was cast into the lake of fire.*

While we are looking at some of the interesting things pertaining to Israel in the Millennial Age we probably need to reassure ourselves of a couple of other points. Along the way we saw the throne of David being a part of the Millennial Age. Does Messiah sit on this throne and reign or not? Here's what scripture says: Matthew 25:31-46, *“When the Son of Man comes in His glory, and all the holy angels with Him, then He will sit on the throne of His glory. All the nations will be gathered before Him, and He will separate them one from another, as a shepherd divides his sheep from the goats. And He will set the sheep on His right hand, but the goats on the left. Then the King will say to those on His right hand, ‘Come, you blessed of My Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: for I was hungry and you gave Me food; I was thirsty and you gave Me drink; I was a stranger and you took Me in; I was naked and you clothed Me; I was sick and you visited Me; I was in prison and you came to Me.’”*

“Then the righteous will answer Him, saying, ‘Lord, when did we see You hungry and feed You, or thirsty and give You drink? When did we see You a stranger and take You in, or naked and clothe You? Or when did we see You sick, or in prison, and come to You?’”

“And the King will answer and say to them, ‘Assuredly, I say to you, inasmuch as you did it to one of the least of these My brethren, you did it to Me.’”

“Then He will also say to those on the left hand, ‘Depart from Me, you cursed, into the everlasting fire prepared for the devil and his angels: for I was hungry and you gave Me no food; I was thirsty and you gave Me no drink; I was a stranger and you did not take Me in, naked and you did not clothe Me, sick and in prison and you did not visit Me.’”

“Then they also will answer Him, saying, ‘Lord, when did we see You hungry or thirsty or a stranger or naked or sick or in prison, and did not minister to You?’”

“Then He will answer them, saying, ‘Assuredly, I say to you, inasmuch as you did not do it to one of the least of these, you did not do it to Me.’”

“And these will go away into everlasting punishment, but the righteous into eternal life.”

Revelation 11:15, *Then the seventh angel sounded: And there were loud voices in heaven, saying, “The kingdoms of this world have become the kingdoms of our Lord and of His Christ, and He shall reign forever and ever!”*

1 Timothy 6:15, *Which He will manifest in His own time, He who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings and Lord of lords,*

Psalms 72, *Give the king Your judgments, O God, and Your righteousness to the king's Son. He will judge Your people with righteousness, and Your poor with justice. The mountains will bring peace*

to the people, and the little hills, by righteousness. He will bring justice to the poor of the people; He will save the children of the needy, and will break in pieces the oppressor.

They shall fear You as long as the sun and moon endure, throughout all generations. He shall come down like rain upon the grass before mowing, like showers that water the earth. In His days the righteous shall flourish, and abundance of peace, until the moon is no more. He shall have dominion also from sea to sea, and from the River (Euphrates) to the ends of the earth.

Those who dwell in the wilderness will bow before Him, and His enemies will lick the dust. The kings of Tarshish and of the isles will bring presents; the kings of Sheba and Seba will offer gifts. Yes, all kings shall fall down before Him; all nations shall serve Him. For He will deliver the needy when he cries, the poor also, and him who has no helper. He will spare the poor and needy, and will save the souls of the needy. He will redeem their life from oppression and violence; and precious shall be their blood in His sight. And He shall live; and the gold of Sheba will be given to Him; prayer also will be made for Him continually, and daily He shall be praised.

There will be an abundance of grain in the earth, on the top of the mountains; its fruit shall wave like Lebanon; and those of the city shall flourish like grass of the earth. His name shall endure forever; His name shall continue as long as the sun. And men shall be blessed in Him; all nations shall call Him blessed. Blessed be the LORD God, the God of Israel, who only does wondrous things! And blessed be His glorious name forever!

And let the whole earth be filled with His glory. Amen and Amen. The prayers of David the son of Jesse are ended.

Zechariah 14:16-21, And it shall come to pass that everyone who is left of all the nations which came against Jerusalem shall go up from year to year to worship the King, the LORD of hosts, and to keep the Feast of Tabernacles. And it shall be that whichever of the families of the earth do not come up to Jerusalem to worship the King, the LORD of hosts, on them there will be no rain. If the family of Egypt (it seems this means foreigners as well as Israel) will not come up and enter in, they shall have no rain; they shall receive the plague with which the LORD strikes the nations who do not come up to keep the Feast of Tabernacles. This shall be the punishment of Egypt and the punishment of all the nations that do not come up to keep the Feast of Tabernacles.

In that day HOLINESS TO THE LORD shall be engraved on the bells of the horses. The pots in the Lord's house shall be like the bowls before the altar. Yes, every pot in Jerusalem and Judah shall be holiness to the LORD of hosts. Everyone who sacrifices shall come and take them and cook in them. In that day there shall no longer be a Canaanite in the house of the LORD of hosts.

Another important question that every Christian has in the back of his mind is concerning the statement that they (the true church) will reign with Christ. Is this so? Once more what is it that scripture says: 2 Timothy 2:12, If we endure, we shall also reign with Him. If we deny Him, He also will deny us.

Revelation 20:6, Blessed and holy is he who has part in the first resurrection. Over such the second death has no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with Him a thousand years.

Revelation 5:9-10, And they sang a new song, saying: "You are worthy to take the scroll, and to open its seals; for You were slain, and have redeemed us to God by Your blood out of every tribe and tongue and people and nation, and have made us kings and priests to our God; and we shall reign on the earth."

Just for the sake of keeping everything in its proper perspective during the Millennial reign of Christ let's once again look at the scriptures pertaining to Israel during the Millennial Kingdom: Zechariah 8:13, "And it shall come to pass that just as you were a curse among the nations, O house of Judah and house of Israel, so I will save you, and you shall be a blessing. Do not fear, let your hands be strong." Zechariah 8:23, Thus says the LORD of hosts: "In those days ten men from every language of the

nations shall grasp the sleeve of a Jewish man, saying, 'Let us go with you, for we have heard that God is with you.'”

Amos 9, I saw the Lord standing by the altar, and He said: “Strike the doorposts, that the thresholds may shake, and break them on the heads of them all. I will slay the last of them with the sword. He who flees from them shall not get away, and he who escapes from them shall not be delivered. Though they dig into Hell, from there my hand shall take them; though they climb up to heaven, from there I will bring them down; and though they hide themselves on top of Carmel, from there I will search and take them; though they hide from My sight at the bottom of the sea, from there I will command the serpent, and it shall bite them; though they go into captivity before their enemies, from there I will command the sword, and it shall slay them. I will set My eyes on them for harm and not for good.”

The Lord GOD of hosts, He who touches the earth and it melts, and all who dwell there mourn; all of it shall swell like the river, and subside like the river of Egypt. He who builds His layers in the sky, and has founded His strata in the earth; who calls for the waters of the sea, and pours them out on the face of the earth; the LORD is His name.

“Are you not like the people of Ethiopia to Me, O children of Israel?” says the LORD. “Did I not bring up Israel from the land of Egypt, the Philistines from Caphtor, and the Syrians from Kir? Behold, the eyes of the Lord GOD are on the sinful kingdom, and I will destroy it from the face of the earth; yet I will not utterly destroy the house of Jacob,” says the LORD.

“For surely I will command, and will sift the house of Israel among all nations, as grain is sifted in a sieve; yet not the smallest grain shall fall to the ground. All the sinners of My people shall die by the sword, who say, ‘The calamity shall not overtake nor confront us.’ On that day I will raise up the tabernacle of David, which has fallen down, and repair its damages; I will raise up its ruins, and rebuild it as in the days of old; that they may possess the remnant of Edom, and all the Gentiles who are called by My name,” says the LORD who does this thing.

“Behold, the days are coming,” says the LORD, “When the plowman shall overtake the reaper, and the treader of grapes him who sows seed; the mountains shall drip with sweet wine, and all the hills shall flow with it. I will bring back the captives of My people Israel; they shall build the waste cities and inhabit them; they shall plant vineyards and drink wine from them; they shall also make gardens and eat fruit from them. I will plant them in their land, and no longer shall they be pulled up from the land I have given them,” says the LORD your God.

Messiah's Kingdom

There are three significant points that must be examined to get through this study. They are the actual Kingdom of Christ, the earth, and finally the people. Our first point is the Kingdom itself. Here's scriptures of which I am aware that illustrate the Kingdom. Zechariah 14:9, *And the LORD shall be King over all the earth. In that day it shall be; the LORD is one, and His name one.*

Zechariah 14:16-21, *And it shall come to pass that everyone who is left of all the nations which came against Jerusalem shall go up from year to year to worship the King, the LORD of hosts, and to keep the Feast of Tabernacles. And it shall be that whichever of the families of the earth do not come up to Jerusalem to worship the King, the LORD of hosts, on them there will be no rain. If the family of Egypt will not come up and enter in, they shall have no rain; they shall receive the plague with which the LORD strikes the nations who do not come up to keep the Feast of Tabernacles. This shall be the punishment of Egypt and the punishment of all the nations that do not come up to keep the Feast of Tabernacles.*

In that day HOLINESS TO THE LORD shall be engraved on the bells of the horses. The pots in the Lord's house shall be like the bowls before the altar. Yes, every pot in Jerusalem and Judah shall be holiness to the LORD of hosts. Everyone who sacrifices shall come and take them and cook in them. In that day there shall no longer be a Canaanite in the house of the LORD of hosts.

Psalms 2:6-9, *"Yet I have set My King on My holy hill of Zion. I will declare the decree: The LORD has said to Me, 'You are My Son, today I have begotten You. Ask of Me, and I will give You the nations for Your inheritance, and the ends of the earth for Your possession. You shall break them with a rod of iron; You shall dash them to pieces like a potter's vessel.'"*

Isaiah 2:2-4, *Now it shall come to pass in the latter days that the mountain of the Lord's house shall be established on the top of the mountains, and shall be exalted above the hills; and all nations shall flow to it. Many people shall come and say, "Come, and let us go up to the mountain of the LORD, to the house of the God of Jacob; He will teach us His ways, and we shall walk in His paths." For out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of the LORD from Jerusalem. He shall judge between the nations, and rebuke many people; they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruning hooks; nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war anymore.*

Isaiah 11:6-9, *"The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, the leopard shall lie down with the young goat, the calf and the young lion and the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them. The cow and the bear shall graze; their young ones shall lie down together; and the lion shall eat straw like the ox. The nursing child shall play by the cobra's hole, and the weaned child shall put his hand in the viper's den. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all My holy mountain, for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the LORD as the waters cover the sea.*

Isaiah 65:18-23, *"But be glad and rejoice forever in what I create; for behold, I create Jerusalem as a rejoicing, and her people a joy. I will rejoice in Jerusalem, and joy in My people; the voice of weeping shall no longer be heard in her, nor the voice of crying. No more shall an infant from there live but a few days, nor an old man who has not fulfilled his days; for the child shall die one hundred years old, but the sinner being one hundred years old shall be accursed."*

This sentence is going to cause some to question its meaning. I think a different translation of this verse can clear up many a question. Here is the same verse from the NIV. *Never again will there be in it an infant who lives but a few days, or an old man who does not live out his years; he who dies at a hundred will be thought a mere youth; he who fails to reach a hundred will be considered accursed.*

"They shall build houses and inhabit them; they shall plant vineyards and eat their fruit. They shall not build and another inhabit; they shall not plant and another eat; for as the days of a tree, so shall be the

days of My people, and My elect shall long enjoy the work of their hands. They shall not labor in vain, nor bring forth children for trouble; for they shall be the descendants of the blessed of the LORD, and their offspring with them.”

Jeremiah 31:12-14, “Therefore they shall come and sing in the height of Zion, streaming to the goodness of the LORD; for wheat and new wine and oil, for the young of the flock and the herd; their souls shall be like a well-watered garden, and they shall sorrow no more at all. Then shall the virgin rejoice in the dance, and the young men and the old, together; for I will turn their mourning to joy, will comfort them, and make them rejoice rather than sorrow. I will satiate the soul of the priests with abundance, and My people shall be satisfied with My goodness, says the LORD.”

Jeremiah 31:31-37, “Behold, the days are coming, says the LORD, when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah; not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day that I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt, My covenant which they broke, though I was a husband to them, says the LORD. But this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, says the LORD: I will put My law in their minds, and write it on their hearts; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people.”

“No more shall every man teach his neighbor, and every man his brother, saying, ‘Know the LORD,’ for they all shall know Me, from the least of them to the greatest of them, says the LORD. For I will forgive their iniquity, and their sin I will remember no more.” Thus says the LORD, who gives the sun for a light by day, the ordinances of the moon and the stars for a light by night, who disturbs the sea, and its waves roar (The LORD of hosts is His name): “If those ordinances depart from before Me, says the LORD, then the seed of Israel shall also cease from being a nation before Me forever.”

Thus says the LORD: “If heaven above can be measured, and the foundations of the earth searched out beneath, I will also cast off all the seed of Israel for all that they have done,” says the LORD.

Ezekiel 34:25-29, “I will make a covenant of peace with them, and cause wild beasts to cease from the land; and they will dwell safely in the wilderness and sleep in the woods. I will make them and the places all around My hill a blessing; and I will cause showers to come down in their season; there shall be showers of blessing. Then the trees of the field shall yield their fruit, and the earth shall yield her increase. They shall be safe in their land; and they shall know that I am the LORD, when I have broken the bands of their yoke and delivered them from the hand of those who enslaved them. And they shall no longer be a prey for the nations, nor shall beasts of the land devour them; but they shall dwell safely, and no one shall make them afraid. I will raise up for them a garden of renown, and they shall no longer be consumed with hunger in the land, nor bear the shame of the Gentiles anymore.”

Ezekiel 37:1-6, The hand of the LORD came upon me and brought me out in the Spirit of the LORD, and set me down in the midst of the valley; and it was full of bones. Then He caused me to pass by them all around, and behold, there were very many in the open valley; and indeed they were very dry. And He said to me, “Son of man, can these bones live?”

So I answered, “O Lord GOD, You know.”

Again He said to me, “Prophecy to these bones, and say to them, ‘O dry bones, hear the word of the LORD!’ Thus says the Lord GOD to these bones: ‘Surely I will cause breath to enter into you, and you shall live. I will put sinews on you and bring flesh upon you, cover you with skin and put breath in you; and you shall live. Then you shall know that I am the LORD.’”

Daniel 2:35, “Then the iron, the clay, the bronze, the silver, and the gold were crushed together, and became like chaff from the summer threshing floors; the wind carried them away so that no trace of them was found. And the stone that struck the image became a great mountain and filled the whole earth.”

Daniel 7:13-14, "I was watching in the night visions, and behold, One like the Son of Man, coming with the clouds of heaven! He came to the Ancient of Days, and they brought Him near before Him. Then to Him was given dominion and glory and a kingdom, that all peoples, nations, and languages should serve Him. His dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and His kingdom the one which shall not be destroyed."

Joel 2:21-27, Fear not, O land; be glad and rejoice, for the LORD has done marvelous things! Do not be afraid, you beasts of the field; for the open pastures are springing up, and the tree bears its fruit; the fig tree and the vine yield their strength. Be glad then, you children of Zion, and rejoice in the LORD your God; for He has given you the former rain faithfully, and He will cause the rain to come down for you; the former rain, and the latter rain in the first month. The threshing floors shall be full of wheat, and the vats shall overflow with new wine and oil. "So I will restore to you the years that the swarming locust has eaten, the crawling locust, the consuming locust, and the chewing locust, My great army which I sent among you. You shall eat in plenty and be satisfied, and praise the name of the LORD your God, who has dealt wondrously with you; and My people shall never be put to shame. Then you shall know that I am in the midst of Israel: I am the LORD your God and there is no other. My people shall never be put to shame."

Amos 9:13-14, "Behold, the days are coming," says the LORD, "When the plowman shall overtake the reaper, and the treader of grapes him who sows seed; the mountains shall drip with sweet wine, and all the hills shall flow with it. I will bring back the captives of My people Israel; they shall build the waste cities and inhabit them; they shall plant vineyards and drink wine from them; they shall also make gardens and eat fruit from them."

Micah 4:1-7, Now it shall come to pass in the latter days that the mountain of the Lord's house shall be established on the top of the mountains, and shall be exalted above the hills; and peoples shall flow to it. Many nations shall come and say, "Come, and let us go up to the mountain of the LORD, to the house of the God of Jacob; He will teach us His ways, and we shall walk in His paths." For out of Zion the law shall go forth, and the word of the LORD from Jerusalem. He shall judge between many peoples, and rebuke strong nations afar off; they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruning hooks; nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more. But everyone shall sit under his vine and under his fig tree, and no one shall make them afraid; for the mouth of the LORD of hosts has spoken. For all people walk each in the name of his god, but we will walk in the name of the LORD our God forever and ever.

"In that day," says the LORD, "I will assemble the lame, I will gather the outcast and those whom I have afflicted; I will make the lame a remnant, and the outcast a strong nation; so the LORD will reign over them in Mount Zion from now on, even forever."

Zephaniah 3:9-20, "For then I will restore to the peoples a pure language, that they all may call on the name of the LORD, to serve Him with one accord. From beyond the rivers of Ethiopia My worshipers, the daughter of My dispersed ones, shall bring My offering. In that day you shall not be shamed for any of your deeds in which you transgress against Me; for then I will take away from your midst those who rejoice in your pride, and you shall no longer be haughty in My holy mountain. I will leave in your midst a meek and humble people, and they shall trust in the name of the LORD. The remnant of Israel shall do no unrighteousness and speak no lies, nor shall a deceitful tongue be found in their mouth; for they shall feed their flocks and lie down, and no one shall make them afraid."

"Sing, O daughter of Zion! Shout, O Israel! Be glad and rejoice with all your heart, O daughter of Jerusalem! The LORD has taken away your judgments, He has cast out your enemy. The King of Israel, the LORD, is in your midst; you shall see disaster no more. In that day it shall be said to Jerusalem: "Do not fear; Zion, let not your hands be weak. The LORD your God in your midst, the Mighty One, will save; He will rejoice over you with gladness, He will quiet you with His love, He will

rejoice over you with singing.”

“I will gather those who sorrow over the appointed assembly, who are among you, to whom its reproach is a burden. Behold, at that time I will deal with all who afflict you; I will save the lame, and gather those who were driven out; I will appoint them for praise and fame in every land where they were put to shame. At that time I will bring you back, even at the time I gather you; for I will give you fame and praise among all the peoples of the earth, when I return your captives before your eyes,” says the LORD.

Matthew 5:1-20, *And seeing the multitudes, He went up on a mountain, and when He was seated His disciples came to Him. Then He opened His mouth and taught them, saying: “Blessed are the poor in spirit, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. Blessed are those who mourn, for they shall be comforted. Blessed are the meek, for they shall inherit the earth. Blessed are those who hunger and thirst for righteousness, for they shall be filled. Blessed are the merciful, for they shall obtain mercy. Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God. Blessed are the peacemakers, for they shall be called sons of God. Blessed are those who are persecuted for righteousness’ sake, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. Blessed are you when they revile and persecute you, and say all kinds of evil against you falsely for My sake. Rejoice and be exceedingly glad, for great is your reward in heaven, for so they persecuted the prophets who were before you.”*

“You are the salt of the earth; but if the salt loses its flavor, how shall it be seasoned? It is then good for nothing but to be thrown out and trampled underfoot by men. You are the light of the world. A city that is set on a hill cannot be hidden. Nor do they light a lamp and put it under a basket, but on a lampstand, and it gives light to all who are in the house. Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works and glorify your Father in heaven.”

“Do not think that I came to destroy the Law or the Prophets. I did not come to destroy but to fulfill. For assuredly, I say to you, till heaven and earth pass away, one jot or one tittle will by no means pass from the law till all is fulfilled. Whoever therefore breaks one of the least of these commandments, and teaches men so, shall be called least in the kingdom of heaven; but whoever does and teaches them, he shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven. For I say to you, that unless your righteousness exceeds the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, you will by no means enter the kingdom of heaven.”

Matthew 19:27-30, *Then Peter answered and said to Him, “See, we have left all and followed You. Therefore what shall we have?”*

So Jesus said to them, “Assuredly I say to you, that in the regeneration, when the Son of Man sits on the throne of His glory, you who have followed Me will also sit on twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel. And everyone who has left houses or brothers or sisters or father or mother or wife or children or lands, for My name’s sake, shall receive a hundredfold, and inherit eternal life. But many who are first will be last, and the last first.”

Matthew 26:27-29, *Then He took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, “Drink from it, all of you. For this is My blood of the new covenant, which is shed for many for the remission of sins. But I say to you, I will not drink of this fruit of the vine from now on until that day when I drink it new with you in My Father’s kingdom.”*

Mark 14:25, “Assuredly, I say to you, I will no longer drink of the fruit of the vine until that day when I drink it new in the kingdom of God.”

Luke 22:18, “For I say to you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine until the kingdom of God comes.”

1 Corinthians 6:9-11, *Do you not know that the unrighteous will not inherit the kingdom of God? Do not be deceived. Neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor homosexuals, nor sodomites, nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners will inherit the kingdom of God. And such were some of you. But you were washed, but you were sanctified, but you were justified in the name of the Lord Jesus and by the Spirit of our God.*

Revelation 20, *Then I saw an angel coming down from heaven, having the key to the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. He laid hold of the dragon, that serpent of old, who is the Devil and Satan, and bound him for a thousand years; and he cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal on him, so that he should deceive the nations no more till the thousand years were finished. But after these things he must be released for a little while.*

And I saw thrones, and they sat on them, and judgment was committed to them. Then I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded for their witness to Jesus and for the word of God, who had not worshiped the beast or his image, and had not received his mark on their foreheads or on their hands. And they lived and reigned with Christ for a thousand years. But the rest of the dead did not live again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection. Blessed and holy is he who has part in the first resurrection. Over such the second death has no power; but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with Him a thousand years.

Now when the thousand years have expired, Satan will be released from his prison and will go out to deceive the nations which are in the four corners of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle, whose number is as the sand of the sea. They went up on the breadth of the earth and surrounded the camp of the saints and the beloved city. And fire came down from God out of heaven and devoured them. The devil, who deceived them, was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone where the beast and the false prophet are. And they will be tormented day and night forever and ever.

Then I saw a great white throne and Him who sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away. And there was found no place for them. And I saw the dead, small and great, standing before God, and books were opened. And another book was opened, which is the Book of Life. And the dead were judged according to their works, by the things which were written in the books. The sea gave up the dead who were in it, and Death and Hades delivered up the dead who were in them. And they were judged, each one according to his works. Then Death and Hades were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. And anyone not found written in the Book of Life was cast into the lake of fire. Notice something! The only place that implies the Millennial Kingdom will be for a thousand years is in Revelation 20.

The Earth

Many of the verses that pertained to the Millennial Kingdom also spoke about things to be on the earth. The following delineates the verses that illustrate the condition of the earth during the Millennial Age. Zechariah 14:4-8, *And in that day His feet will stand on the Mount of Olives, which faces Jerusalem on the east. And the Mount of Olives shall be split in two, from east to west, making a very large valley; half of the mountain shall move toward the north and half of it toward the south. Then you shall flee through My mountain valley, for the mountain valley shall reach to Azal. Yes, you shall flee as you fled from the earthquake in the days of Uzziah king of Judah. Thus the LORD my God will come, and all the saints with You. It shall come to pass in that day that there will be no light; the lights will diminish. It shall be one day which is known to the LORD; neither day nor night. But at evening time it shall happen that it will be light. And in that day it shall be that living waters shall flow from Jerusalem, half of them toward the eastern sea and half of them toward the western sea; in both summer and winter it shall occur.*

Joel 3:18, *And it will come to pass in that day that the mountains shall drip with new wine, the hills shall flow with milk, and all the brooks of Judah shall be flooded with water; a fountain shall flow from the house of the LORD and water the Valley of Acacias.*

Amos 9:13-15, *“Behold, the days are coming,” says the LORD, “when the plowman shall overtake the reaper, and the treader of grapes him who sows seed; the mountains shall drip with sweet*

wine, and all the hills shall flow with it. I will bring back the captives of My people Israel; they shall build the waste cities and inhabit them; they shall plant vineyards and drink wine from them; they shall also make gardens and eat fruit from them. I will plant them in their land, and no longer shall they be pulled up from the land I have given them,” says the LORD your God.

Isaiah 35:1, *The wilderness and the wasteland shall be glad for them, and the desert shall rejoice and blossom as the rose.*

Isaiah 55:13, *“Instead of the thorn shall come up the cypress tree, and instead of the brier shall come up the myrtle tree; and it shall be to the LORD for a name, for an everlasting sign that shall not be cut off.”*

Isaiah 11:6-9, *“The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, the leopard shall lie down with the young goat, the calf and the young lion and the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them. The cow and the bear shall graze; their young ones shall lie down together; and the lion shall eat straw like the ox. The nursing child shall play by the cobra’s hole, and the weaned child shall put his hand in the viper’s den. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all My holy mountain, for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the LORD as the waters cover the sea.”*

The People

I have been approached by some who believe that the people who enter the Millennial Kingdom have some special attribute of a spiritual body that permits them to have children. Sorry, that would suggest that there is a third type of body that is not revealed in scripture. I just don’t believe that to be so. God’s Word identified a terrestrial body and a spiritual body. There is no mention of a third type body that possesses both characteristics. Thus, I have to believe that while there are certain changes that are made toward the people, such as a long life, comparable to that recorded in Genesis. However, the people who begin the Millennial Age are flesh and blood mortal beings capable of bearing children (which is something that scripture says an immortal being cannot do). Isaiah 65:20-23, *“No more shall an infant from there live but a few days, nor an old man who has not fulfilled his days; for the child shall die one hundred years old, but the sinner being one hundred years old shall be accursed. They shall build houses and inhabit them; they shall plant vineyards and eat their fruit. They shall not build and another inhabit; they shall not plant and another eat; for as the days of a tree, so shall be the days of My people, and My elect shall long enjoy the work of their hands. They shall not labor in vain, nor bring forth children for trouble; for they shall be the descendants of the blessed of the LORD, and their offspring with them.”*

Jeremiah 23:3-6, *“But I will gather the remnant of My flock out of all countries where I have driven them, and bring them back to their folds; and they shall be fruitful and increase. I will set up shepherds over them who will feed them; and they shall fear no more, nor be dismayed, nor shall they be lacking,” says the LORD. “Behold, the days are coming,” says the LORD, “that I will raise to David a Branch of righteousness; a King shall reign and prosper, and execute judgment and righteousness in the earth. In His days Judah will be saved, and Israel will dwell safely; now this is His name by which He will be called: **THE LORD OUR RIGHTEOUSNESS.**”*

Jeremiah 30:19-20, *“Then out of them shall proceed thanksgiving and the voice of those who make merry; I will multiply them, and they shall not diminish; I will also glorify them, and they shall not be small. Their children also shall be as before, and their congregation shall be established before Me; and I will punish all who oppress them.*

Along these same lines we can also find that those in the Millennial Kingdom will marry, once again this is something that immortals are not permitted to do. Isaiah 4:1-3, *And in that day seven*

women shall take hold of one man, saying, "We will eat our own food and wear our own apparel; only let us be called by your name, to take away our reproach." In that day the Branch of the LORD shall be beautiful and glorious; and the fruit of the earth shall be excellent and appealing for those of Israel who have escaped. And it shall come to pass that he who is left in Zion and remains in Jerusalem will be called holy; everyone who is recorded among the living in Jerusalem.

Thus the second point to understanding is that those who enter the Millennial Kingdom will be mortals in fleshly bodies. The only time we can say those who enter the Millennial Age could possibly be immortals is that these individuals will work. We know from the Bible that both mortals and immortals do, in fact, work. Isaiah 62:8-9, *The LORD has sworn by His right hand and by the arm of His strength: "Surely I will no longer give your grain as food for your enemies; and the sons of the foreigner shall not drink your new wine, for which you have labored. But those who have gathered it shall eat it, and praise the LORD; those who have brought it together shall drink it in My holy courts."*

Isaiah 65:21-23, *"They shall build houses and inhabit them; they shall plant vineyards and eat their fruit. They shall not build and another inhabit; they shall not plant and another eat; for as the days of a tree, so shall be the days of My people, and My elect shall long enjoy the work of their hands. They shall not labor in vain, nor bring forth children for trouble; for they shall be the descendants of the blessed of the LORD, and their offspring with them."*

Jeremiah 31:5, *You shall yet plant vines on the mountains of Samaria; the planters shall plant and eat them as ordinary food."*

One of the first tasks these mortals must perform is the burying of the dead. Ezekiel 39:9-16, *"Then those who dwell in the cities of Israel will go out and set on fire and burn the weapons, both the shields and bucklers, the bows and arrows, the javelins and spears; and they will make fires with them for seven years. They will not take wood from the field nor cut down any from the forests, because they will make fires with the weapons; and they will plunder those who plundered them, and pillage those who pillaged them," says the Lord GOD.*

"It will come to pass in that day that I will give Gog a burial place there in Israel, the valley of those who pass by east of the sea; and it will obstruct travelers, because there they will bury Gog and all his multitude. Therefore they will call it the Valley of Hamon Gog. For seven months the house of Israel will be burying them, in order to cleanse the land. Indeed all the people of the land will be burying, and they will gain renown for it on the day that I am glorified," says the Lord GOD.

"They will set apart men regularly employed, with the help of a search party, to pass through the land and bury those bodies remaining on the ground, in order to cleanse it. At the end of seven months they will make a search. The search party will pass through the land; and when anyone sees a man's bone, he shall set up a marker by it, till the buriers have buried it in the Valley of Hamon Gog. The name of the city will also be Hamonah. Thus they shall cleanse the land."

Even though this period is started out with believers only, the children of these individuals may, or may not, accept the teaching, standards and guidelines of Messiah. At the end of the thousand year reign there will be much disobedience. Revelation 20:7-9, *Now when the thousand years have expired, Satan will be released from his prison and will go out to deceive the nations which are in the four corners of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle, whose number is as the sand of the sea. They went up on the breadth of the earth and surrounded the camp of the saints and the beloved city. And fire came down from God out of heaven and devoured them.*

One of the major differences between now and at that time will be the longevity of people in general. We can go back into Biblical history and see the age of the people at the time of Noah to be near a thousand years. During the Millennial Age those who enter will also be alive at the end. Isaiah 65:20-23, *"No more shall an infant from there live but a few days, nor an old man who has not fulfilled his days; for the child shall die one hundred years old, but the sinner being one hundred years old shall*

be accursed. They shall build houses and inhabit them; they shall plant vineyards and eat their fruit. They shall not build and another inhabit; they shall not plant and another eat; for as the days of a tree, so shall be the days of My people, and My elect shall long enjoy the work of their hands. They shall not labor in vain, nor bring forth children for trouble; for they shall be the descendants of the blessed of the LORD, and their offspring with them.” Notice in verse 22 that the people shall live to the length of life of a tree. There are trees that live to be 2000 years of age. In these same verses, we can see that there shall be no want for food or shelter.

Mankind’s infirmities will also be removed and there shall be no sickness. Isaiah 29:18, *In that day the deaf shall hear the words of the book, and the eyes of the blind shall see out of obscurity and out of darkness.*

Isaiah 33:24, *And the inhabitant will not say, “I am sick”; the people who dwell in it will be forgiven their iniquity.*

Jeremiah 31:12-14, *“Therefore they shall come and sing in the height of Zion, streaming to the goodness of the LORD; for wheat and new wine and oil, for the young of the flock and the herd; their souls shall be like a well-watered garden, and they shall sorrow no more at all.”*

“Then shall the virgin rejoice in the dance, and the young men and the old, together; for I will turn their mourning to joy, will comfort them, and make them rejoice rather than sorrow. I will satiate the soul of the priests with abundance, and My people shall be satisfied with My goodness, says the LORD.”

Isaiah 35:4-6, *Say to those who are fearful-hearted, “Be strong, do not fear! Behold, your God will come with vengeance, with the recompense of God; He will come and save you.” Then the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped. Then the lame shall leap like a deer, and the tongue of the dumb sing. For waters shall burst forth in the wilderness, and streams in the desert.*

Isaiah 65:20, *“No more shall an infant from there live but a few days, nor an old man who has not fulfilled his days; for the child shall die one hundred years old, but the sinner being one hundred years old shall be accursed.”*

Finally, there is the question of what happens to the spirit and soul of the believer who endures through the Millennial Age. It could easily be said that these believers must stand before the Great White Throne judgement as the books are opened and the names are checked. Revelation 20:12-15, *And I saw the dead, small and great, standing before God, and books were opened. And another book was opened, which is the Book of Life. And the dead were judged according to their works, by the things which were written in the books. The sea gave up the dead who were in it, and Death and Hades delivered up the dead who were in them. And they were judged, each one according to his works. Then Death and Hades were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. And anyone not found written in the Book of Life was cast into the lake of fire.*

There is a question at this point. We have seen time and again that God protects his own and makes an escape route for them prior to any harm coming to them. Why wouldn’t God do the same for the believers who make it through the Millennial Age? Well, I care to believe that He does and the answer rests in two verses. First, look at 1 Corinthians 15:26, *The last enemy that will be destroyed is death*. If death has been destroyed then the first part of Revelation 20:12 would not apply. Revelation 20:12, *And I saw the dead, small and great, standing before God, and books were opened. And another book was opened, which is the Book of Life. And the dead were judged according to their works, by the things which were written in the books.* I care to believe that the believers who go through the Millennial Age will be changed directly into their glorified body and will not be judged with the dead, however, do not misunderstand me. They will all be judged, both believer and unbeliever.

Now, just so you do not misunderstand anything pertaining to the release of Satan after the Millennial Age, the Great White Throne judgement, and the doom of Satan, here are the verses from Revelation 20 one more time. Revelation 20:7-15, *Now when the thousand years have expired, Satan will be released from his prison and will go out to deceive the nations which are in the four corners of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle, whose number is as the sand of the sea. They went up on the breadth of the earth and surrounded the camp of the saints and the beloved city. And fire came down from God out of heaven and devoured them. The devil, who deceived them, was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone where the beast and the false prophet are. And they will be tormented day and night forever and ever.*

Then I saw a great white throne and Him who sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away. And there was found no place for them. And I saw the dead, small and great, standing before God, and books were opened. And another book was opened, which is the Book of Life. And the dead were judged according to their works, by the things which were written in the books. The sea gave up the dead who were in it, and Death and Hades delivered up the dead who were in them. And they were judged, each one according to his works. Then Death and Hades were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. And anyone not found written in the Book of Life was cast into the lake of fire.

After the Great White Throne judgement we can see the cleansing of the earth and the final new earth, new Heaven and new Jerusalem. 2 Peter 3:1-18, *Beloved, I now write to you this second epistle (in both of which I stir up your pure minds by way of reminder), that you may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us, the apostles of the Lord and Savior, knowing this first: that scoffers will come in the last days, walking according to their own lusts, and saying, "Where is the promise of His coming? For since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of creation." For this they willfully forget: that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of water and in the water, by which the world that then existed perished, being flooded with water. But the heavens and the earth which are now preserved by the same word, are reserved for fire until the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men.*

But, beloved, do not forget this one thing, that with the Lord one day is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day. The Lord is not slack concerning His promise, as some count slackness, but is longsuffering toward us, not willing that any should perish but that all should come to repentance.

But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night, in which the heavens will pass away with a great noise, and the elements will melt with fervent heat; both the earth and the works that are in it will be burned up. Therefore, since all these things will be dissolved, what manner of persons ought you to be in holy conduct and godliness, looking for and hastening the coming of the day of God, because of which the heavens will be dissolved, being on fire, and the elements will melt with fervent heat? Nevertheless we, according to His promise, look for new heavens and a new earth in which righteousness dwells.

Therefore, beloved, looking forward to these things, be diligent to be found by Him in peace, without spot and blameless; and consider that the longsuffering of our Lord is salvation; as also our beloved brother Paul, according to the wisdom given to him, has written to you, as also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things, in which are some things hard to understand, which untaught and unstable people twist to their own destruction, as they do also the rest of the Scriptures. You therefore, beloved, since you know this beforehand, beware lest you also fall from your own steadfastness, being led away with the error of the wicked; but grow in the grace and knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. To Him be the glory both now and forever. Amen.

Revelation 21, *Now I saw a new heaven and a new earth, for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away. Also there was no more sea. Then I, John, saw the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. And I heard a loud voice*

from heaven saying, “Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people. God Himself will be with them and be their God. And God will wipe away every tear from their eyes; there shall be no more death, nor sorrow, nor crying. There shall be no more pain, for the former things have passed away.”

Then He who sat on the throne said, “Behold, I make all things new.” And He said to me, “Write, for these words are true and faithful.” And He said to me, “It is done! I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End. I will give of the fountain of the water of life freely to him who thirsts. He who overcomes shall inherit all things, and I will be his God and he shall be My son. But the cowardly, unbelieving, abominable, murderers, sexually immoral, sorcerers, idolaters, and all liars shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone, which is the second death.”

Here is the real deal! The summation of thirty years of searching the Bible for truth. God is a conservative (period). I say that without question. It should be a simple task for anyone to read the entire Bible and come to that conclusion.

If you believe that just because there is a theme of love (God’s love) running through the Bible that God will not demand justice you are very, very wrong. If you believe, in a liberal viewpoint, that God needs your opinion, or thinks you could lead better than He can, you are terribly mistaken. God requires respect, responsibility and discipline of His creation. Most of all we must all remember that God created us for His pleasure, we did not create God for our pleasure.

All of mankind must understand that once Adam sinned (that was Adam as both a male and a female) every one of us was born into sin as a matter of heritage. Thus, there is only one choice that each of us must make when we reach the age of accountability. Are we going to accept Christ as Messiah, Savior and the only Son of God? There isn’t two choices (Heaven or Hell) because mankind is already destined for Hell by default. The only choice we have to make is to accept God’s Son.

It seems to me that liberals, and their ideas, propose that there are two choices that mankind has that can be made. They proclaim that somehow by doing good works mankind can be elevated to some false level of grace and God will accept that they have followed His rules. In both situations the answer is—not true!

Maybe, just maybe, some of you have never really understood how a person is saved. Please believe me that it is not because you go to church every Sunday. It is not because you sing in the choir. It is not because you teach a Sunday School class. It is not because you prepare a meal for every potluck dinner. It is not because you play short stop on the church softball team. It is not because you are a trustee or deacon. It is not because you are a pastor.

The only way to be saved has been given. It is in Romans in the Bible. Romans 10:9-10, *that if you confess with your mouth the Lord Jesus and believe in your heart that God raised Him from the dead, you will be saved. For with the heart one believes unto righteousness, and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.* Once saved, by grace, it is up to us to grow our faith and to ask the Holy Spirit to answer our questions and for us to learn the truth of God’s Word. It will not do to put our eternal life into the hands of other men, no matter how well educated or spiritual they may be. Their opinions and decisions will not count for you when you stand before the Lord. It is by your decision, and your decision alone to select where your spirit and soul will spend eternity. Select wisely!

Here’s my conclusion. The answers are in the Bible. In fact, the Bible tells me this directly and I believe what it says. Look at what Jesus himself said. Mark 13:23, “But take heed; see, I have told you all things beforehand.”)

Luke 12:2, “For there is nothing covered that will not be revealed, nor hidden that will not be known.”

John 14:26, “But the Helper, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in My name, He will teach you all things, and bring to your remembrance all things that I said to you.”

Hebrews 10:7, *Then I said, “Behold, I have come; in the volume of the book it is written of Me; to do Your will, O God.”*

It seems to me that we are told that all things will be revealed to us and that the Holy Spirit will teach us all things. It even says to me that if a person wants to find Christ all we have to do is read the Bible (*the volume of the book*). I find this to be so simple, and others find this to be so difficult. I don't understand why.

Some have asked why I keep the web site (www.VQPub.org) going since I'm the only one who puts any money into keeping it on the web. All I can say is found in the following verse. Matthew 10:8, *“Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out demons. Freely you have received, freely give.* I give simply because it was given to me. Through faith I fully believe what Timothy says. 2 Timothy 1:12, *For this reason I also suffer these things; nevertheless I am not ashamed, for I know whom I have believed and am persuaded that He is able to keep what I have committed to Him until that Day.*

Finally, I must say something about the current world situation. The human spirit desires freedom and liberty. While no one should desire war there comes a time that righteous men with strong convictions will come along and buck the flow of mundane life. Such a time has come and Christians should not be appalled at the idea. Didn't Christ tell the Apostles that there would be wars and rumors of wars until He returned? Matthew 24:6 NIV, *You will hear of wars and rumors of wars, but see to it that you are not alarmed. Such things must happen, but the end is still to come.*

Mark 13:7 NIV, *When you hear of wars and rumors of wars, do not be alarmed. Such things must happen, but the end is still to come.*

Paul told us in his letter to the Ephesians that we were not fighting against flesh and blood but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this age, against spiritual hosts of wickedness in the heavenly places.

Ephesians 6:12 NIV, *For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the powers of this dark world and against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms.*

Daniel experienced the wrath of one of these rulers who held evil power over Persia. Daniel 10:13 NIV, *But the prince of the Persian kingdom resisted me twenty-one days. Then Michael, one of the chief princes, came to help me, because I was detained there with the king of Persia.* Christians may not like the present situation, but we should not fear it. What we should do is pray for our President, for our soldiers and for our nation.

Please remember that this work is the culmination of thirty-five years of research, reading, praying and listening to the Holy Spirit guiding me through God's Word. By God's grace I understand His wondrous book of instructions by which mankind is to live. Yes, the major theme of His book is love. God's love for His creation. Yes, there is only one choice mortal human creatures have to make. Mankind is to accept God's Son as Christ and Savior. To not make this choice sends your spirit and soul to eternal damnation. Only one choice! It is so easy to make.

Have you made the choice to be with God throughout eternity?

If you have not made that choice please do it today, in fact this very minute. Confess with your mouth that you are a sinner and ask Jesus to come into your heart. Believe with all your heart and soul that Jesus is the Son of God.

Charles E. Darnell <><

Learning

A Lesson We Don't Learn Well Enough

The man whispered, "God speak to me!" and a meadowlark sang. But the man did not hear. So the man yelled, "**God speak to me!**" and the thunder rolled across the sky. But the man did not listen. The man looked around and said, "God let me see you!" and a star shone brightly. But the man did not notice. Then the man shouted, "**God show me a miracle!**" and a new life was born. But the man did not know. So the man cried out in despair, "Touch me Lord and let me know that you are here!" whereupon God reached down and touched the man. But the man brushed the butterfly away and walked on.

Don't miss out on the blessing just because it isn't packaged the way you expected.

I've Learned

I've learned —

that no matter how good a friend is, they're going to hurt you every once in a while and you must forgive them for that.

I've learned —

that you can do something in an instant that will give you heartache for life.

I've learned —

that it's taking me a long time to become the person I want to be.

I've learned —

that you should always leave loved ones with loving words. It may be the last time you see them.

I've learned —

that you can keep going long after you can't.

I've learned —

that we are responsible for what we do, no matter how we feel.

I've learned —

that either you control your attitude or it controls you.

I've learned —

that heroes are the people when it needs to be done, regardless of the consequences.

I've learned —

that regardless of how hot and steamy a relationship is at first, the passion fades and there had better be something else to take its place.

I've learned —
that money is a lousy way of keeping score.

I've learned —
that my best friend and I can do anything or nothing and have the best time.

I've learned —
that sometimes the people you expect to kick you when you're down, will be the ones to help you get back up.

I've learned —
that sometimes when I'm angry I have the right to be angry, but that doesn't give me the right to be cruel.

I've learned —
that just because someone doesn't love you the way you want them to doesn't mean they don't love you with all they have.

I've learned —
that maturity has more to do with what types of experiences you've had and what you've learned from them and less to do with how many birthdays you've celebrated.

I've learned —
that it isn't always enough to be forgiven by others. Sometimes you have to learn to forgive yourself.

I've learned —
that no matter how bad your heart is broken the world doesn't stop for your grief.

I've learned —
that our background and circumstances may have influenced who we are, but we are responsible for who we become.

I've learned —
that just because two people argue, it doesn't mean they don't love each other. And just because they don't argue, it doesn't mean they do.

I've learned —
that you shouldn't be so eager to find out a secret. It could change your life forever.

I've learned —
that two people can look at the exact same thing and see something totally different.

I've learned —
that your life can be changed in a matter of hours by people who don't even know you.

I've learned —

that even when you think you have no more to give, when a friend cries out to you, you will find the strength to help.

I've learned —

that credentials on the wall do not make you a decent human being.

I've learned —

that the people you care about the most in life are taken from you too soon.

These two thoughts of inspiration were received over the Internet — Author Unknown.

I thank those who have sent them my way, and I now send them your way. I can only ask the Father to bless the ones who wrote these words.

As we progressed through this work I know that some of my words in these lessons are not soft words. They are not delivered in a gentle manner, they silently slap you and upset you. But, I must confess they are what I have received from the Holy Spirit. They are meant to chastise you and cause you to look at yourselves.

Oh! If only I could explain the tears, the pain that I go through nightly when the Holy Spirit talks to my spirit. I have trembled, cried, prayed, and even begged, “Why me?” I keep seeing Moses telling God that he was not the one to go to Pharaoh. But, all the time I was growing, learning, becoming stronger and more confident that what I was seeing, what I was hearing, was all true and that I did possess the knowledge of the Word and was being prepared to teach the truth. Now, it is your time, through these words, I have sown the seed. Let our Lord reap a bountiful harvest through you. May your greatness, and God’s truth, shine from you. **A precious child of God!**

Another billboard out along the highways and byways reads:

“There are many rooms in my mansion. Is yours prepared?”

— God



Answers to the pop quiz on page 57.

- 
1. Yes! It comes after the 3rd of July just like it does in the United States.
 2. One! If you have more than one birthday each year there is something wrong.
 3. 12! There may be one month with only 28 days but you have to go through 28 to get to 30 or 31.
 4. 6! Each team gets three outs during an inning.
 5. No! It can't happen the man is dead, that's why his wife is called a widow.
 6. 70! We are dividing 30 by $\frac{1}{2}$, not by 2, so there are 60 halves in 30 plus the other ten.
 7. 2! Didn't it just say that you took two?
 8. 60 minutes! You take one at the doctor's office, the second at thirty minutes and the third at 1 hour (60 minutes).
 9. 9! The same 9 that didn't die.
 10. None! Moses wasn't on the ark it was Noah. There's another question here. Change the name to Noah and answer the question. The answer is half. Half of the animals must be male and half must be female for you to have pairs.
 11. 12! A dozen is a dozen no matter what it is, two-cent stamps or something else.



VQP C



VQP C



VQP C



Appendix I

LOVE!

On page 93 there was a discussion pertaining to the word love. The complication is trying to define all the various words of Hebrew and Greek that are only translated into the English word love. That study identified five words in English that are in the Bible. I indicated that the entire search would be given in an appendix. For those who really want to know how complex this search was I present everything here.

Remember the five words we started with are copulation, fornication, knew, love and lust. Right off the bat I knew that it was not going to be easy to give clear meanings to some things. Look at the word knew for just a moment. I know from my readings that there is a verse in Genesis that indicates that Adam and Eve had sexual relations because it says in Genesis 4:1 that, *Adam knew Eve his wife*. It also says in Genesis 3:7 that, *They knew that they were naked*. Strong's identifies the word knew in these two verses as being the same word. So how is one to understand that Adam had relations with his wife. It really is not in the word knew but in the sentence as a whole. Genesis 4:1, *Adam knew Eve his wife; and she conceived, and bare Cain, and said I have gotten a man from the Lord*. So, the truth of the matter is that Adam and Eve had sexual relations. If not, please explain to me how Eve conceived.

It seems that the reality of the initial question is that there are four words we really have to deal with to find a starting point toward our quest. The first of these words is copulation and used the first time in Leviticus 15:16, 17 and 18. It is assigned the number 7902 in Strong's Hebrew lexicon: OT:7902 shekabah (shek-aw-baw'); from OT:7901; a lying down (of dew, or for the sexual act): KJV - X carnally, copulation, X lay, seed. In this we see that this number goes back to 7901; OT:7901 shakab (shaw-kab'); a primitive root; to lie down (for rest, sexual connection, decease or any other purpose): KJV - X at all, cast down, ([lover-]) lay (self) (down), (make to) lie (down, down to sleep, still with), lodge, ravish, take rest, sleep, stay. So it seems that the meaning given to the Hebrew word in these three verses refers to the sexual act; or going back to the primitive root to lie down for sexual connection.

Let me make it perfectly clear that God gave sex to the human species no matter how much you have heard that sex is in many ways taboo. Turn back to Genesis 1:26-28. This is during the sixth day of creation where God made man and in verse 28. He blessed this creation of male and female and told them to: Be fruitful, multiply, replenish the earth, and subdue it. Think, how is mankind going to multiply or replenish the earth?

Our next word to view is fornication and Strong's begins to show us just how little we really understand the Bible. While many of you believe that you understand what this word means let me ask you this even before I show you the answer. Would you believe that there are five meanings for this one word? Watch this! In the Old Testament there are two definitions given for this word, they are 2181 and 8457. In the New Testament there are three definitions given, they are 4202, 4203, and 1608.

I'll give the first verse where the term is used for all five entries along with the Hebrew or Greek lexicon definition:

2181, 2 Chronicles 21:11, OT:2181 zanah (zaw-naw'); a primitive root [highly-fed and therefore wanton]; to commit adultery (usually of the female, and less often of simple fornication, rarely of involuntary ravishment); figuratively, to commit idolatry (the Jewish people being regarded as the spouse of Jehovah): KJV - (cause to) commit fornication, X continually, X great, (be an, play the)

harlot, (cause to be, play the) whore, (commit, fall to) whoredom, (cause to) go a-whoring, whorish. 8457, Ezekiel 16:29, OT:8457 taznuwth (taz-nooth'); or taznuth (taz-nooth'); from OT:2181; harlotry, i.e. (figuratively) idolatry: KJV - fornication, whoredom.

4202, Matthew. 19:9, NT:4202 porneia (por-ni'-ah); from NT:4203; harlotry (including adultery and incest); figuratively, idolatry: KJV - fornication.

4203, 1 Corinthians 7:2, NT:4203 porneuo (porn-yoo'-o); from NT:4204; to act the harlot, i.e. (literally) **indulge unlawful lust (of either sex)**, or (figuratively) practise idolatry: KJV - commit (fornication).

We have another case where the root comes from another word that is not in our original search, so here is 4204: NT:4204 porne (por'-nay); feminine of NT:4205; a strumpet; figuratively, an idolater: KJV - harlot, whore.

Which leads to 4205: NT:4205 pornos (por'-nos); from pernemi (to sell; akin to the base of NT:4097); a (**male**) **prostitute** (as venal), i.e. (by analogy) a debauchee (libertine): KJV - fornicator, whoremonger.

Which leads to 4097: NT:4097 piprasko (pip-ras'-ko); a reduplicated and prolonged form of prao (prah'-o); (which occurs only as an alternate in certain tenses); contracted from perao (to traverse; from the base of NT:4008); to traffic (by travelling), i.e. dispose of as merchandise or into slavery (literally or figuratively): KJV - sell.

For those who really believe that God made five genders; i.e., male, female, gay, lesbian and transsexual I think the truth comes through very clearly when we start to look at and understand the meanings of the original words as given in Hebrew and Greek. Notice the definitions for both 4203 and 4205. One other thing, have you noticed the pronunciation of the Greek words 4202 through 4205; they are pornia, porneuo, porne and pornos; all four contain the modern English word **porn**. We still have one other word to look at in the New Testament under fornication.

1608, Jude 7, NT:1608 ekporneuo (ek-porn-yoo'-o); from NT:1537 and NT:4203; to be utterly unchaste: KJV - give self over to fornication.

We have already given the definition for 4203 but we haven't seen 1537 so here it is: NT:1537 ek (ek) or ex (ex); a primary preposition denoting origin (the point whence action or motion proceeds), from, out (of place, time, or cause; literal or figurative; direct or remote): KJV - after, among, X are, at, betwixt (-yond), by (the means of), exceedingly, (+abundantly above), for (-th), from (among, forth, up), + grudgingly, + heartily, X heavenly, X hereby, + very highly, in, . . . ly, (because, by reason) of, off (from), on, out among (from, of), over, since, X thenceforth, through, X unto, X vehemently, with (-out). Often used in composition, with the same general import; often of completion.

It seems that we get a pretty good understanding by placing the two words 1537 and 4203 together: a primary preposition denoting origin (the point whence action or motion proceeds), from, out of the indulging of unlawful lust (of either sex).

We dropped the two definitions for knew, had one definition for copulation, and the original five for fornication which turned out to have additional meanings and now have eleven words that we are dealing with. Remember we only started with five words to look at to teach the truth about the word love and we already have eleven definitions that we have dealt with just to get through two words. What in the world are we going to have to do to get through the primary word of love in our four word search?

We haven't seen anything yet and have just now started to break the surface of understanding what love, as used in the Bible, is all about. Let's look at this one word love and see how many definitions we find. The following is a list for the word love in the Hebrew/Greek lexicon with the number for the word and the first verse of occurrence for each definition along with the definition.

LOVE

157, Genesis 27:4, OT:157 'ahab (aw-hab'); or 'aheb (aw-habe'); a primitive root; **to have affection for (sexually or otherwise):** KJV - (be-) love (-d, -ly, -r), **like, friend.**

160, Genesis 29:20, OT:160 'ahabah (a-hab-aw); **feminine of OT:158** and meaning the same: KJV - love.

We didn't have 158 so here it is: OT:158 'ahab (ah'-hab); from OT:157; **affection (in a good or a bad sense):** KJV - love (-r).

2836, Deuteronomy 7:7, OT:2836 chashaq (khaw-shak'); a primitive root; **to cling**, i.e. join, (figuratively) to love, **delight in**; elliptically (or by interchangeable for OT:2820) to deliver: KJV - have a delight, **(have a desire, fillet, long, set (in) love.**

7355, Psalms 18:1, OT:7355 racham (raw-kham'); a primitive root; **to fondle**; by implication, to love, especially to compassionate: KJV - **have compassion (on, upon)**, love, (find, have, obtain, shew) mercy (-iful, on, upon), (have) pity, Ruhamah, X surely.

1730, Proverbs 7:18, OT:1730 dowd (dode); or (shortened) dod (dode); from an unused root meaning properly, to boil, i.e. (figuratively) to love; by implication, **a lovetoken, lover, friend**; specifically an uncle: KJV - (well-) beloved, father's brother, love, uncle.

7474, Song of Songs 1:9, OT:7474 ra` yah (rah-yaw'); feminine of OT:7453; **a female associate:** KJV - fellow, love.

We did not have 7453 so here it is: OT:7453 rea` (ray'-ah); or reya` (ray'-ah); from OT:7462; **an associate** (more or less close): KJV - brother, **companion, fellow, friend, husband, lover, neighbor**, X (an-) other.

We also did not have 7462: OT:7462 ra` ah (raw-aw'); a primitive root; to tend a flock; i.e. pasture it; intransitively, to graze (literally or figuratively); generally to rule; by extension, **to associate with (as a friend):** KJV - X break, **companion, keep company with**, devour, eat up, evil entreat, feed, **use as a friend, make friendship with**, herdman, keep [sheep-], pastor, + shearing house, shepherd, wander, waste.

5691, Ezekiel 23:11, OT:5691 `agabah (ag-aw-baw'); from OT:5689; love (abstractly), i.e. **amorousness:** KJV - **inordinate love.**

We did not have 5689: OT:5689 `agab (aw-gab'); a primitive root; to breathe after, i.e. **to love (sensually):** KJV - dote, lover.

5690, Ezekiel 33:31, OT:5690 `egeb (eh'-gheb); from OT:5689; **love (concretely)**, i.e. amative words: KJV - **much love, very lovely.**

All total we have looked up twelve Hebrew words from the Old Testament which are translated love in English. Twelve words that all translate as love and we haven't even gone to the New Testament to see the Greek words and what they mean. Here are the Greek words from the New Testament.

25, Matthew 5:43, NT:25 agapao (ag-ap-ah'-o); perhaps from agan (much) [or compare OT:5689]; **to love (in a social or moral sense):** KJV - **(be-) love (-ed).** Compare NT:5368.

We have already seen OT:5689; however, we have not seen 5368, which is the next definition in our search.

5368, Matthew 6:5, NT:5368 phileo (fil-eh'-o); from NT:5384; **to be a friend to (fond of [an individual or an object])**, i.e. **have affection for** (denoting personal attachment, as a matter of sentiment or feeling; while NT:25 is wider, embracing especially the judgment and the deliberate assent of the will as a matter of principle, duty and propriety: the two thus stand related very much as NT:2309 and NT:1014, or as NT:2372 and NT:3563 respectively; the former being chiefly of the heart and the latter of the head); **specifically, to kiss (as a mark of tenderness):** KJV - kiss, love.

We are starting to get into statements of comparison and of words that relate back to Hebrew; however, while we may have had two words that did relate and actually by verse reference NT:2309 is our next word. But, we did not, and do not, have 1014, 2372 nor 3563 in our list of words that we are looking for so they are here inserted.

1014, NT:1014 boulomai (boo'-lom-ahee); middle voice of a primary verb.; to "will," i.e. (reflexively) be willing: KJV - be disposed, minded, intend, list, (be, of own) will (-ing). Compare NT:2309.

2372, NT:2372 thumos (thoo-mos'); from NT:2380; **passion (as if breathing hard)**: KJV - fierceness, indignation, wrath. Compare NT:5590.

We also do not have 5590 in our list so here it is: NT:5590 psuche (psoo-khay'); from NT:5594; **breath**, i.e. (by implication) **spirit**, abstractly or concretely (the animal sentient principle only; thus distinguished on the one hand from NT:4151, **which is the rational and immortal soul**; and on the other from NT:2222, which is mere vitality, even of plants: these terms thus exactly correspond respectively to the Hebrew OT:5315, OT:7307 and OT:2416): KJV - **heart** (+-ily), life, **mind, soul**, + us, + you.

Somehow we have transcended from love to breath meaning our soul and spirit. I guess, in many ways, love does encompass our spirit and our soul but how do we even begin to think in this manner. How are we to accept that our spirit and soul could possibly tie to another being; and yet, that is exactly what the relationship to God is. We are all created in the image of God, we have a body, a spirit and a soul and through our spirit and soul we are taught that God is Spirit and we are spirit and must worship in spirit. The battle, we are told, is fought over the soul. That battle is the choice we make of where we want to spend eternity. Do we want to be with God (good) or do we want to spend eternity with Satan (rebellion and sin — apart from God)?

3563, NT:3563 nous (nooce); probably from the base of NT:1097; **the intellect**, i.e. **mind (divine or human; in thought, feeling, or will)**; by implication meaning: KJV - **mind, understanding**. Compare NT:5590.

We continue to transcend and view words that do not equate directly to the word love. Through the process we have come to understand that love, meaning pure love, must also have some substance of intellect or understanding. Therefore, it would seem to this author that to have a complete understanding of love an individual must also have some understanding of one's own spirit and soul. How does our spirit and soul connect to the Divine Spirit of God in the universal oneness that is there between all living creatures.

We haven't even gotten through half of the words that equate to love in the Greek language and have gone to a depth of understanding and knowledge that few would ever attempt to undertake or even begin to try and understand. Yet, here we are, you and I, together, viewing the meaning of Hebrew and Greek words that only translate to the English word love. We have surpassed most sermons, teachings and lessons taught to us from our denominational churches. Do you begin to understand what I meant when I said that this subject was controversial and most Priest or Pastors would not ever attempt to teach you these things. Really, I have nothing to lose and you have everything to gain. Truth will honestly set you free. But, you must be willing to study and take the time to know the truth and to accept the truth. When your know, knows that what you know is the truth then, and only then, you have gotten to that place to understand the truth of what you know. Now, that is a mouth full, but it is true, until you understand within your spirit and your soul that which you know is the truth you haven't gotten there and are still searching. There are far too many individuals that are searching today to find the truth and don't know where to turn, even to begin the search. One would think that the church, and its leaders, would be the source to lead any person into this field of study and enlightenment. Alas, that is not the case and many go on their daily journey without answers, disillusioned by what they see and hear. Unaware of where the actual answers are hidden and how to find those answers. Then God sends

those weird people who don't seem to fit into any category who are always going against the flow of everyone. You know the ones, they have left the church and the teachings of their denomination. They read all the time and many things just seem to roll off their backs. They really are odd ducks. They really don't fit any norm and are just there. They do have answers. Answers to questions that many people want resolved. However, some people are too obsessed to ask or believe that someone has been placed along their personal pathway that just might give them truth that the church, the Priest, or the Pastor will not give.

I am one such odd duck! This work is the result of all those questions you've been asking that no one seems to want to provide you with the answers. Keep reading we will get to all those answers that you desire to know. But first, we must get through our study of the words that translate to the word love in the English language. We have not gotten through the various words in the New Testament and must continue.

2309, Matthew 12:38, NT:2309 thelo (thel'-o); or ethelo (eth-el'-o); in certain tenses theleo (thel-eh'-o); and etheleo (eth-el-eh'-o); which are otherwise obsolete; apparently strengthened from the alternate form of NT:138; **to determine (as an active option from subjective impulse;** whereas NT:1014 properly denotes rather a passive acquiescence in objective considerations), i.e. choose or prefer (literally or figuratively); by implication, to wish, i.e. be inclined to (sometimes adverbially, gladly); impersonally for the future tense, to be about to; by Hebraism, to delight in: KJV - **desire**, be disposed (forward), intend, list, love, mean, please, have rather, (be) will (have, -ling, -ling [-ly]).

26, Matthew 24:12, NT:26 agape (ag-ah'-pay); from NT:25; love, i.e. affection or benevolence; specially (plural) **a love-feast: KJV - (feast of) charity ([-ably]), dear, love.**

5360, Romans 12:10, NT:5360 philadelphia (fil-ad-el-fee'-ah); from NT:5361; **fraternal affection: KJV - brotherly love (kindness),** love of the brethren.

While we find a reference to 5361 I'm not going to insert it here because it is the last reference in our list of words.

5365, 1 Timothy 6:10, NT:5365 philarguria (fil-ar-goo-ree'-ah); from NT:5366; avarice: KJV - **love of money.**

We do not have 5366 in our list so here it is: NT:5366 philarguros (fil-ar'-goo-ros); from NT:5384 and NT:696; **fond of silver (money),** i.e. avaricious: KJV - **covetous.**

Which leads to 5384 and 696 which are also inserted here:

5384, NT:5384 philos (fee'-los); properly, **dear,** i.e. **a friend;** actively, **fond,** i.e. friendly (still as a noun, **an associate, neighbor,** etc.): KJV - **friend.**

696, NT:696 arguros (ar'-goo-ros); from argos (shining); **silver (the metal, in the articles or coin):** KJV - silver.

5362, Titus 2:4, NT:5362 philandros (fil'-an-dros); from NT:5384 and NT:435; fond of man, i.e. **affectionate as a wife: KJV - love their husbands.**

5388, Titus 2:4, NT:5388 philoteknos (fil-ot'-ek-nos); from NT:5384 and NT:5043; **fond of one's children, i.e. maternal: KJV - love their children.**

We have neither 5384 or 5043 in our list so here they are:

5043, NT:5043 teknon (tek'-non); from the base of NT:5098; **a child (as produced):** KJV - **child, daughter, son.**

5363, Titus 3:4, NT:5363 philanthropia (fil-an-thro-pee'-ah); from the same as NT:5364; **fondness of mankind, i.e. benevolence ("philanthropy"): KJV - kindness, love towards man.**

5361, 1 Peter 3:8, NT:5361 philadelphos (fil-ad'-el-fos); from NT:5384 and NT:80; **fond of brethren, i.e. fraternal: KJV - love as brethren.**

That gives all the words that are listed under love in both the Hebrew and Greek. I did a subtotal after the Hebrew words and must do the same at this point and give a total. This is so amazing to me. There are a total of ten words that are listed under the word love in Strong's and yet we have looked at and reviewed a total of nineteen words in the New Testament alone. The combined total of words that we have gone through to even begin to understand the word love is a total of 30 different words. No wonder mankind finds it hard to read and understand the Bible. There are very few people that would even take the time to try and figure all this out. Then try to put it together so someone else could understand it is even harder to imagine.

We still have one more word that we need to review before we can call this completed. That word is **lust** and here is the list and definitions for the various meanings:

5315, Exodus 15:9, OT:5315 nephesh (neh'-fesh); from OT:5314; properly, a **breathing creature**, i.e. animal of (abstractly) vitality; used very widely in a literal, accommodated or figurative sense (bodily or mental): KJV - any, appetite, beast, body, **breath**, creature, X dead (-ly), **desire**, X [dis-] contented, X fish, **ghost**, + greedy, he, heart (-y), (hath, X jeopardy of) life (X in jeopardy), **lust**, man, **me**, **mind**, **mortally**, **one**, **own**, **person**, **pleasure**, (her-, him-, my-, thyself-), them (your)- selves, + slay, **soul**, + tablet, they, thing, (X she) will, X would have it.

We do not have 5314 in our list so here it is: OT:5314 naphash (naw-fash'); a primitive root; to breathe; passively, **to be breathed upon**, i.e. (figuratively) refreshed (as if by a current of air): KJV - (be) refresh selves (-ed).

8378, Psalms 78:30, OT:8378 ta'avah (tah-av-aw'); from OT:183 (abbreviated); a longing; by implication, a **delight** (subjectively, satisfaction, objectively, a charm): KJV - dainty, **desire**, X **exceedingly**, X **greedily**, lust (ing), pleasant. See also OT:6914

Neither 183 or 6914 is in our list so here they are:

183, OT:183 'avah (aw-vaw'); a primitive root; **to wish for**: KJV - **covet**, (greatly) **desire**, be desirous, long, **lust (after)**.

6914, OT:6914 Qibrowth hat-Ta'a-vah (kib-roth' hat-tah-av-aw'); from the feminine plural of OT:6913 and OT:8378 with the article interposed; graves of the longing; Kibroth-hat-Taavh, a place in the Desert: KJV - Kibroth-hattaavah.

I must admit that this one makes no sense to any other thing that we have queried or discussed; however, for sake of discussion I'll add 6913. As for 8378 we have already looked at it above.

6913, OT:6913 qeber, (keh'-ber); or (feminine) qibrah (kib-raw'); from OT:6912; a sepulchre: KJV - burying place, grave, sepulchre. ***. qeburah. See OT:6900.

8307, Psalms 81:12, OT:8307 sheryruwth (sher-ee-rooth'); from OT:8324 **in the sense of twisted**, i.e. firm; obstinacy: KJV - **imagination**, **lust**.

2530, Proverbs 6:25, OT:2530 chamad (khaw-mad'); a primitive root; **to delight in**: KJV - beauty, **greatly beloved**, **covet**, delectable thing, (X great) delight, desire, goodly, lust, (be) pleasant (thing), precious (thing).

1937, Matthew 5:28, NT:1937 epithumeo (ep-ee-thoo-meh'-o); from NT:1909 and NT:2372; **to set the heart upon**, i.e. **long for (rightfully or otherwise)**: KJV - **covet**, **desire**, would fain, **lust (after)**.

Neither 1909 or 2372 are in our list; however, 2372 was added in our search of the word love. Here is 1909:

1909, NT:1909 epi (ep-ee'); a primary preposition; properly, meaning superimposition (of time, place, order, etc.), as a relation of distribution [with the genitive case], i.e. over, upon, etc.; of rest (with the det.) at, on, etc.; of direction (with the accusative case) towards, upon, etc.: KJV - about (the times), above, after, against, among, as long as (touching), at, beside, X have charge of, (be-, [wherefore-]), in (a place, as much as, the time of, -to), (because) of, (up-) on (behalf of), over, (by, for) the space of,

through (-out), (un-) to (-ward), with. In compounds it retains essentially the same import, at, upon, etc. (literally or figuratively).

3715, Romans 1:27, NT:3715 orexis (or'-ex-is); from NT:3713; **excitement of the mind**, i.e. **longing after**: KJV - **lust**.

3713 is not in our list and added here: NT:3713 oregomai (or-eg'-om-ahee); middle voice of apparently a prolonged form of an obsolete primary [compare NT:3735]; to stretch oneself, i.e. **reach out after (long for)**: KJV - **covet after, desire**.

3735 is not in our list either and added here: NT:3735 oros (or'-os); probably from an obsolete oro (to rise or rear; perhaps akin to NT:142; compare NT:3733); a mountain (as lifting itself above the plain): KJV - hill, mount (-ain).

We're headed in the wrong direction. We're now comparing the magnitude of one's desire as a definition for the word lust.

1939, Romans 7:7, NT:1939 epithumia (ep-ee-thoo-mee'-ah); from NT:1937; **a longing (especially for what is forbidden)**: KJV - concupiscence, **desire, lust (after)**.

3806, 1 Thessalonians 4:5, NT:3806 pathos (path'-os); from the alternate of NT:3958; properly, suffering (pathos), i.e. (subjectively) **a passion** (especially concupiscence): KJV - **(inordinate) affection, lust**.

We now have all our words checked and defined. Amazing!



VQP C



VQP C



VQP C



